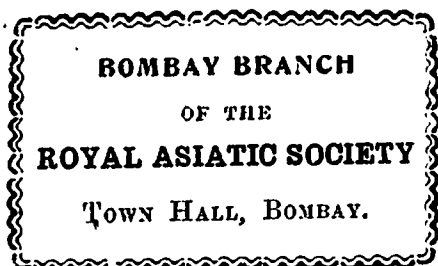




00032754







A.

# LADY'S SECOND JOURNEY

ROUND

## THE WORLD:

FROM LONDON TO THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE, BORNEO, JAVA,  
SUMATRA, CELEBES, CERAM, THE MOLUCCAS, ETC.  
CALIFORNIA, PANAMA, PERU, ECUADOR,  
AND THE UNITED STATES.

32754

*al*

BY IDA PFEIFFER,

AUTHRESS OF "THE LADY'S JOURNEY ROUND THE WORLD," "TRAVELS IN  
ICELAND, SCANDINAVIA, THE HOLY LAND," ETC.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

*AA-i-10*

LONDON:  
LONGMAN, BROWN, GREEN, AND LONGMANS.  
1855.

*[The Author of this work reserves the right of translation.]*

32754



00032754

# CONTENTS

OF

## THE SECOND VOLUME.

---

### CHAPTER I.

	Page
Sidenring.—The Lakes of Tempe and Lagusi.—A Royal Banquet.—Return to Sidenring. — The Deer Hunt.— Visit to the Sultan of Goa. — Departure from Celebes. — Surabaya.—A Malay Wedding. — A Ghost Story.— Return to Batavia - - - - -	1

### CHAP. II.

Voyage from Batavia to California. — The City of Wonders. — High Prices. — Gambling Houses. — American Judicial Proceedings. — American Travelling Companions. — The Plaza Sacramento. — Visit to General Sutter.—Mary's Ville. — Brown's Valley. — The Gold Washings of the Yuba River.—The Indians - - - - -	40
--	----

### CHAP. III.

Crescent City. — Excursion to the Rogue-River. — In-	
--	--

	Page
dians.—A Night Bivouac in the Wigwam.—Dangerous Situation of my Travelling Companion.—Revengeful Disposition of the Indians.—San José.—Acapulco.— Panama - - - - -	81

## CHAP. IV.

Journey to Lima.—The English Steamer.—Guayaquil.— Kallao.—German Emigrants.—Lima.—Churches and Public Buildings.—Peruvian Ladies.—Earthquake. —Insecurity.—The Watering-place.—Chorillos.—The Ruin of the Temple of the Sun.—Pochacamac.—The Hacienda of St. Pedro - - - - -	126
---	-----

## CHAP. V.

Ecuador.—Journey to Quito.—Trip on the Guaya.— Savanetta.—The Tambos.—The Camino Real.—Gua- randa.—Passage of the Chimborazo.—The Elevated Plains of Ambato and Latacunga.—Eruption of the Cotopaxi.—The Haciendas and their Owners - - -	167
---	-----

## CHAP. VI.

Quito.—Residences of the People.—Things to be seen.— Church Festivals.—The Clergy and the Government.— The Indians.—The Theatre.—Return to Guayaquil.— The Chimborazo.—A Bull-Fight.—Deadly Peril.—Pa- nama.—Journey across the Isthmus.—Aspinwall - - -	206
--	-----

## CHAP. VII.

New Orleans.—Public Buildings.—Hotels.—The French Market-Place.—Public Slave Auction.—Slave Dealers.	
---	--



	Page
—Visit to a Plantation.—Slavery.—Instances of Cruel Treatment of Slaves.—Free Negroes and Coloured People.—Indulgence towards White Criminals	240

## CHAP. VIII.

Departure from New Orleans.—Napoleon.—Voyage on the Arkansas.—Little Rock.—Company in the Steamer.—American Ill Manners.—Emancipated Children.—Fort Smith.—The Cherokee Indians.—St. Louis.—The Highlands.—The Farmers.—Lakes Pepin and St. Croix	270
---	-----

## CHAP. IX.

St. Paul.—St. Anthony's Falls.—The Fur Hunters.—A Drive in a Stage-coach.—Stillwater.—St. Croix.—Return to Galena.—American Patience.—Chicago.—Lake Michigan.—Milwaukee.—The Subterranean Railway.—The Mormons.—Lake Superior.—The Indians.—Lakes Huron and Erie.—Cleveland.—The Falls of Niagara.—The Village	306
--	-----

## CHAP. X.

The Falls of Niagara.—Lake Ontario.—The Thousand Islands.—Montreal.—Quebec.—The American Railroads.—New York.—Things Noticeable.—The Hotels.—Black Minstrels.—Emancipation.—Proceedings in Courts of Justice	339
--	-----

## CHAP. XI.

The Environs of New York.—Public Institutions.—	
---	--

	Page
Blackwell's and Randall's Island.—The Five Points.— Journey to Boston.—The Letter of Introduction.— Public Dinner at Massachusetts.—Society of Mechan- icians.—Orphan House.—Prisons, &c. — Cambridge.— Lowell.—Return to New York.—The Election. — De- parture from the United States	375

## CHAP. XII.

Arrival in Liverpool.—Voyage to St. Michael's.—Panta del Gada.—Singular Antique Custom.—Villa Franca. —The Ilhio.—The Bathing-Place Furnas.—The Hot Springs.—Departure from St. Michael's.—Entrance into the Tagus.—Lisbon.—Return to England.—Con- clusion	404
--	-----

# A LADY'S SECOND VOYAGE

ROUND

## THE WORLD.

---

### CHAPTER I.

SIDENRING.—THE LAKES OF TEMPE AND LAGUSI.—A ROYAL BANQUET.—RETURN TO SIDENRING.—THE DEER HUNT.—VISIT TO THE SULTAN OF GOA.—DEPARTURE FROM CELEBES.—SURABAYA.—A MALAY WEDDING.—A GHOST STORY.—RETURN TO BATAVIA.

FROM Paré-Paré I travelled on horseback to *Batu-Masapaija*, a ride of twelve miles. This place is a country seat of the King of Sidenring, who lives alternately here and at *Telé-Adjé*, on the lake of Tempe.

The road led in part over a low mountain-ridge, which, with the exception of alang-alang and short grass, was destitute of vegetation, and covered with

loose stones, over which our poor animals had to climb like goats.

We met many packhorses, mostly carrying rice to the harbour of Paré-Paré; and besides these there were so many others ranging about in wild freedom, that horses appeared to constitute the chief population of the country.

The kings of this region keep great studs, and make large sums as horse-dealers.

For several hours the road had been continually rising, but it had lain between hills that shut out every prospect. At length, however, on emerging from a narrow valley, we were abundantly rewarded by one of the finest views perhaps in all Celebes. An almost boundless plain lay spread out before us, and in the midst of it glittered like two silver mirrors the lakes *Tamporang-Uroi*, and *Tamporang-Cabaija*, usually called the lakes of Tempe. The first of these lakes forms a long and irregular, the second a fine round basin. Flourishing rice plantations and large villages announced the prosperity of the district. In the foreground rose many isolated rocks and hills, which, from the height and distance at which we stood, might have passed for *tumuli*, so small and neat did they appear on this enormous plain; and in the distance, grand mountains upreared

themselves like walls built to guard this peaceful valley from the storms of the outer world.

Slowly did I ride down again into the plain, for at every step I lost some feature of the glorious picture; and at last the grandeur had all disappeared, and our path lay once more between hills, and descended till we saw no more than some scattered huts, some stables belonging to the king, and some small fields of maize and rice; and so it went on till we reached Batu-Masapaija, where we found the sovereign in person.

Although the King of Sidenring belongs to the three greatest in Celebes, he lives in the same poor manner as the pettiest rajah. His palace is of bamboo wickerwork, thatched with straw, and looks like a decayed barn.

The interior consists of a great room full of perforated partitions and dirty clambus.

There were some fireplaces at the entrance, on which some half-extinguished brands made just fire enough to fill the place with smoke; and the foreground was swarming with loungers of all ages and both sexes, men, women, and children.

Here was a group crouched on their haunches, smoking and gossiping; there a few more of the sluggards were asleep, stretched out on the ground,

and snoring one against the other. In one place appeared, within a half open clambu a dishevelled head; in another sprawled some naked children covered with dirt; — whichever way I looked, it was a deplorable sight.

The royal pair were also crouched upon their haunches, on a tribune about two feet high, chewing away at the siri like their subjects, and so getting through the livelong day. Here and there near the tribune was a pile of cushions and baskets; ragged clothes hung round, and among them a handsome embroidered military uniform, a present from the King of Holland. The king pointed out this article to me, and begged me to make him a commoner one of the same sort. Such is the fate of the traveller. The King of Paré-Paré would have given a hundred rupees for one of my books, and this one wanted to make me his tailor. I avoided compliance with his modest request by telling him I was a person of too high rank to do any work.

I obtained shelter under a clambu in this ragamuffin palace, and also some food, though of a very indifferent quality, and but little of it. They brought me some little morsels of meat in a vessel the size of my hand, a few fish three or four inches long, and the neck, head, and pinions of a chicken. After this

dinner the king paid me a visit; and, as he happened to see some insects that I had caught on my way, and heard that I set a value on them, he promised, quite of his own accord, to send some people into the woods and get a little collection ready for me at my return.

I was to be back in a few days again, as I was going no further off than for an excursion, by the way of the lakes, to Lagusi, the residence of the Queen of Wadju, whose kingdom borders on that of Bonni; a visit to the latter, as I have already said, was interdicted me. When I took my leave his Majesty of Sidenring promised on my return to have a deer-hunt in my honour.

*May 2nd.* We did not ride to-day more than nine miles, and the road lay through a great plain between almost uninterrupted rice-fields, to the vicinity of the first lake, where we took up our abode in an open hut, that is to say, under a roof of leaves. We passed through several large villages, amongst which *Awarity* deserves especial mention, as it consists of more than 200 houses. Throughout this kingdom I found both houses and villages very large.

To-day, again, my meal consisted of nothing more than rice and some little fish, and merely through the carelessness of my attendants; for in this country

it is the custom, where you are received with anything like hospitality, to ask for whatever you require; and had they requested to have a few fowls and some fruit, &c., it would have been given with the greatest readiness. But they did not make the request, even when I told them to do so, as they did not like the trouble of cooking.

*May 3rd. Lagusi, thirty miles.* This day I was really excessively angry with my people. When I came in the morning to the banks of the river, on which we had to go a short distance to the lake, I found no proa in readiness, and I had to wait a whole hour, standing in the burning sun, and urging them on to their work. At length, with the utmost conceivable slowness, they pushed a hollowed trunk of a tree into the water, and covered it with an awning of leaves so low that I could scarcely sit upright. I stepped with some reluctance into this dangerous and inconvenient boat; but what was my consternation when I saw that as many passengers were to follow as could possibly find room on it! I endeavoured to oppose their entrance; but neither Tolk nor Sendling (the interpreters) paid any attention to my entreaties, but allowed as many to come in as chose, and as could anyhow squeeze themselves into the small space. During the whole passage, which lasted nine



hours, I had to sit cross-legged like the rest, for want of room for my feet—a cause of great suffering to me, though not of course to the rest of the company, as they are accustomed to it. Among the passengers was one old man, who, though he did not look so very infirm, was soon unable to sit up; and in order to make room for him to lie down, we were compelled to squeeze ourselves still closer together. I afterwards found that his extraordinary weakness proceeded from his being a great opium smoker. He carried pipe, opium-lamp, and the whole apparatus with him, and smoked and slept alternately during the whole passage.

The two lakes, whose united length I estimate at about thirty miles, and their greatest breadth at ten, are connected by the river Watta with a channel about a mile and a half long. The lakes are shallow, one of them, indeed, so much so that it seems probable that it will in no long time be converted into a marsh. The whole bottom of it is already covered with plants, which in some places appear above the surface like islands. The shore is by no means pretty, and many parts of it are covered by jungle-grass. On the larger lake lie several considerable villages, which have in the naked country but a poor appearance, as they have neither tree nor bush to

shelter them. The districts bordering on the lake form parts of the little kingdoms of Sidenring, Wadjo, and others; and the mountains of Bonni, also, distant only a day's journey, can be seen from here. Lagusi lies on the Tjenrana, which falls into the great lake, but at a distance of eighteen miles from the mouth.

When I left the boat to walk a quarter of a mile to the royal abode, the whole population of the village accompanied me, for mine was the first European face that had ever been seen here. The whole body tried to enter with me into the palace (a bamboo hut of course), but they were, as might be expected, forcibly put back.

The queen kept me waiting a long while before she made her appearance. She was an old, but lively and vigorous looking woman, and talked a great deal, and with much emphasis. She said she was seventy-six, but judging by the age of her youngest son she could not have been so much. The people here, when they are old, generally try to make themselves out older, in order to add to their dignity; but besides this, they have a very imperfect way of reckoning, and often do not themselves know how many years they should count.

After having partaken of the customary refresh-

ments of tea and sweetmeats, I wished to retire, for I was half-lame from sitting nine hours in that cramped posture : but the great lady would not allow this ; she was too much entertained with the conversation of my interpreter, who told her all the news of the great town of Macassar. She was extremely cheerful and animated, although, as she herself told me, with truly stoical indifference, she had buried a son only three days before.

That is the way with these people. As long as the body is in the house they scream and howl, and behave as if they were frantic with sorrow ; but when it is once buried, the sorrow is buried with it, and they are quite comfortable and merry again.

The queen wore mourning for her son, which consisted of a piece of dark cloth passed round her head, so as quite to conceal her hair, and hanging down upon her shoulders.

Much against my will I was compelled to sup with her Majesty, and the supper was no better than usual. There was a crowd of little dishes, the entire contents of which would by no means have overloaded the stomach of one person with a good appetite. One dish contained a single hard-boiled egg, cut into four parts, another three very tiny potatoes, a third the half of a fish three inches long, a fourth

a few slices of cucumber, a fifth two very little onions, and so forth.

In the midst of this splendid banquet was placed a very large closely covered soup turëen, and upon it a great ladle; on this giant dish I centred all my hopes and expectations, dreaming of boiled fowls, and Heaven knows what dainties, that I supposed it to contain. I took a good portion of rice upon my plate, thinking it would be good with the delicate meat and sauce of the fowl. Still the cover was not raised. I thought I should like a little salt to my rice, and asked for some; and then, at last, off went the cover, the great ladle was plunged in, and about a thimbleful of fine white salt presented to me. The grand dish was merely a monster salt-cellar.

I felt ready to turn into a pillar of salt myself with grief and disappointed hope.

Not less odd was the manner of serving water. Two handsome cut glass decanters, in cases, had been placed before us; and, as decanters are mostly accompanied by glasses, I waited some time in hopes of seeing them brought; but as none came, I asked for them, and was then requested by her Majesty to drink out of the bottle. I did so accordingly, and not only I and she, but the two interpreters, and every one else.

Among the fruits was one called *Durian*, in form and size resembling a middle sized melon, which smells so strongly of garlic, that you can perceive its presence forty yards off. The interior consists of very large white beans lying apart from each other. I had seen this fruit at Bornéo, as well as in the Moluccas; and the Europeans declare that, if you can get accustomed to the smell, the taste is very fine, but that the best way to eat it is when sitting in a boat on a river, so that you can dip your hands every moment into the water. I must own, however, that, though I made several attempts, I never could succeed in liking it, — the perfume was too powerful.

The court lady, or attendant, who waited at table, wore on the thumb of the left hand a *nail-case* at least five inches long; and when I expressed my astonishment at this enormous nail, saying I had never seen anything like it even in China, the land of long nails, she smiled, and drew off the nail-case, and then I saw that it was merely an ornament, and that the nail it was intended to cover was at most of the length of half an inch. The case was the same with others whom I saw wearing this curious decoration — with the exception of the queen's son, who really boasted a nail two inches long. This fashion

of wearing nail-cases, I never saw anywhere else than here.

When the meal was over, I was obliged so far to disregard ceremony as to beg permission to retire. The queen expressed much regret at not being able to receive me in her ruin of a palace, but requested I would follow her son to his, where I should find everything ready for my reception, and should also be presented to his wife, and entertained once more with tea and pastry. This honour, however, I was obliged to decline, and I stepped as quickly as possible under my clambu, and there enjoyed the rest I so much needed.

The prince was still a young man, but his features and complexion betrayed the habitual opium smoker; and his first occupation in the morning was always to light his pipe. This poison, alas! is now continually brought to Celebes.

After the breakfast, which was quite worthy of the preceding evening's supper, I went with the prince to pay a visit to the queen, and take my leave. As I entered, my attention was attracted by three boxes, which I had not noticed the preceding evening, and I soon found that two were to serve as seats for her Majesty and myself, and the third to figure as the table.

I had to wait half an hour for the queen, who I was told was making her toilette,—and such a toilette as it was when it was made! She had on a loose white blouse over her sarang, and her head was, as it had been the day before, wrapped in a handkerchief. By way of decoration, she wore two rows of hollow gold balls, of the form and size of eggs, which were crossed over her breast and shoulders; and at each side of the bosom hung a flat round piece of gold-plate, set with precious stones, that might have been taken for an order, if such a symbol of civilisation could have been expected at Celebes. Her *chaussure*, however, struck me most; it consisted of shoes cut in the European shape, but not out of silk or stuff, but of gold-plate,—soles and all,—and adorned in the front with precious stones.

When the salutations were over the queen told me that she had considered it proper to receive me thus in royal state.

There was a meal to be taken on this occasion too; but while we were engaged at it the queen's son was sent for to view a house where, in the night, thieves had broken in, and stolen, in silver and jewels, to the value of 800 rupees.

The Bugis people, the chief population of this district, are the most notorious thieves and pirates of

the whole archipelago, and also the cleverest and handsomest. Both men and women are tall, well-proportioned, and have much better features than the Malays: their noses are not so flat, — some, indeed, have quite good-looking noses, — and the jaws do not project so much. Their eyes are fine, with an intelligent expression, and their colour is a light reddish-brown.

The women of Celebes, as I have already observed, enjoy equal rights with the men; and when a man has a wife, he cannot take another without her consent. The women are also not excluded from public affairs, and the inhabitants of Wadju (Lagusi) even prefer being governed by a woman. They are a peaceful, commercial people, and they say that the reigns of queens are less disturbed by wars, and more honest, as well as more tranquil, than those of the men.

At eleven o'clock I bade adieu to my royal hostess, as I had ordered my people early this morning to have everything in readiness for our departure. I found, nevertheless, when I went down to the shore, that there was nothing ready, not even a boat; and it cost an infinity of squabbling before I could induce them to bring out the old trunk of a tree that we had had for a boat the day before. The return



passage was, if possible, still more unpleasant than the coming had been. The people rowed so slowly that we seemed scarcely to move, and I had to remain no less than twenty hours—from noon one day till eight the next morning—in this wretched little watery prison. During the night the men laid aside their oars, and went to sleep; so that it was lucky for us that the weather was fine and the lake smooth, though our canoe did, nevertheless, rock so much with every movement of the sleepers that I feared every moment it would lose its balance.

*May 5th.* When we arrived at our leafy bower once more, we rested for two hours; and then we mounted our horses and rode back to *Batu-Masapaija* and the monarch of Sidenring.

My first question was about my insects, and behold the king presented to me—the empty box! These people promise anything with the greatest readiness, but keeping the promise is quite another thing. I then reminded the king of the deer-hunt, and he put me off with a “to-morrow.”

On taking my leave, I thanked him formally for the collection of insects he had procured for me, and the fine stag-hunt he had exhibited for my amusement; and then begged his permission to visit the mountainous district of Duri, whose inhabitants—a

race of Alforas, and an exceedingly wild one—are allies of the King of Sidenring, and are said to live in caves. This journey did not, however, please Tolk and Sendling, for they would have had to travel on foot; and, though I understood almost nothing of the Bugis language, in which they were speaking with the king, I could make out very well that they were trying to induce him to throw difficulties in the way.

The king told me in Malay that he was not just now on the best terms with the people of that country, and could not, therefore, grant my request; but if I had not had these idle, troublesome people with me, I should have obtained my wish, for I saw that the king might have been persuaded. He saw that I was vexed, and, in order to pacify and amuse me, promised that he would really have the hunt the following day.

I passed the whole evening with this royal family, and saw with pleasure that the king and his wife were on the most friendly terms with each other, although they must have been long married, as they had fourteen children. I heard also that the king had but one wife, and that domestic life was in Celebes generally on a better footing than in the other islands of the archipelago. The men seldom

take more than one wife at a time, and divorcés are unfrequent.

The royal pair asked me innumerable questions, and begged me particularly to give them the medicine which, in their opinion, I must use, or I could not at my age be so strong; and the king declared he could not himself, far less his wife, go through what I had, though they were so much younger than me. It was in vain I assured them the difference was chiefly consequent on their mode of life; they persisted in attributing it to medicine.

The conversation now again turned on my *Sultan*, a very favourite theme of all these small royalties. They asked me where he lived, what he had for dinner, how often I went to visit him, and so forth; and I described to them the mode of life of the Imperial family as minutely as if I had lived among them from my youth up.

*May 6th.* Yesterday the queen declared she too would be of the hunting party, and I was greatly surprised at so heroic a resolution; for that a queen should leave her house except on some very important occasion, is an almost unheard of thing here. The Queen of Barru, for instance, told me that, though only eighteen years of age, she had for eight years not gone 200 yards from her dwelling.

When we were about to set out for the hunt, I asked where the queen was; and I was told she could not go with us as she was ill of a fever; I rather think, though, that it was only what we in Germany call the lazy fever.

The scene of action was a beautiful grassy plain, encircled with woods: the deer were hunted with dogs, who tore the poor animals terribly, and then they were killed by the men with spears. Some of the hunters were mounted, and drove in the game; but I and the king merely sat in the shade of a tree and looked on. It was a detestable kind of amusement, which I hope I may never witness again. After the hunt was over the hunters all collected round us, and formed such picturesque groups, that I greatly regretted not being able to take a sketch of them. The horsemen sat with the most careless ease in all kinds of attitudes on their horses, and yet as securely as if they had been on the ground; and the rest disposed themselves in no less striking groups upon the grass. The handkerchiefs that constitute their head-dress were twisted in the most various forms, and, as they always stiffen them very much, they can twist them into any shape they like. The long white sarang, too, was wrapped round their powerful frames in the most becoming manner, or fell in rich

fold from their shoulders. The contemplation of this *tableau vivant* afforded me far more pleasure than the cruel hunt.

A shoulder of venison from one of the slain deer was prepared for our supper; but, alas! the mode of preparation made it almost uneatable. The meat was flung, without even washing or salting, fairly into the fire, and left there scarcely long enough to get warm; so that, though it was quite black outside, and smelt intolerably of smoke, the blood was gushing out from every part.

So lives a king, who, as he himself told me, had in the preceding year lost 8000 rupees at cock-fighting, and the year before that won 10,000 at the same noble sport!

On the morning of the 7th of May I took leave of the royal gambler, and travelled back at a rapid rate. I stopped at Paré-Paré, Baru, and Tannette only just long enough to take the necessary repose, and on the 9th reached once more the frontier of the Dutch possessions, which begin two miles from the capital of the little kingdom of Tannette. At two o'clock I was at Mandalle; and, in order to gain one day's journey, I went forward six miles to Segiri on foot; for, by the time fresh horses could have been procured, it would have been night, and the roads

were too dreadful to venture upon in the dark. My suite did not at all approve of this; but that did not trouble me much, and I set off alone, knowing well that they must follow me.

We had to cross such deep morasses that at one place they had a good deal of trouble to drag me through. I sank in at every step almost to the waist, and they had to pull me out again; yet on the following morning I was so entirely recovered from my fatigue that I rode thirty-two miles, through roads as bad as those of yesterday, and the same deep marshes, which, even for travellers on horseback, are very toilsome. I got to Maros, nevertheless, in quite good condition, but my two interpreters were so affected by the fatigue that they were unwell for several days.

I remained a few days more at Maros, and visited from here the Prince *Aru-Sinri*, former minister of Bonni, who resides about six miles off. His wife, *Aru-Palengerang*, had the right of succession to the lately deceased king, who left no children behind him. She, too, was childless, and had adopted a nephew, who, when the king died, managed to gain such a party for himself that he was able to drive out his benefactress. She and her husband then threw themselves into the arms of the Dutch government, who

built them a pretty bamboo house, and assigned them a pension.

In all Celebes I did not see a princely mansion so well kept as this. The interior was divided into several apartments, with a separate kitchen; the servants were very neatly dressed; the table was elegantly served, the dishes good; and in no European house could more order and cleanliness be found.

The Prince *Aru-Sinri* and his wife were also distinguished above their compatriots for qualities both of the head and heart.

On the 13th of May I rode back to Macassar, where I remained till the 20th, and, before my departure, paid a visit to the Sultan of Goa, in company with a Mr. Weiergang, a merchant of this place.

The kingdom of Goa commences at Macassar itself, and the capital is only four miles off. This kingdom consists of the fragments of the former kingdom of Macassar, once the most powerful of Celebes, and which possessed an excellent army, ruled over many of the surrounding islands, and was considerably advanced towards civilisation.

The Sultan of Goa inhabits a much handsomer house than his royal colleagues of Sidenring and Paré-Paré. It is boarded and adorned with carving; but

the interior presented much the same scene as that of the other royal mansions,—a superfluity of attendants and servants, a chaos of clambus, and innumerable chests and boxes, piled one above another.

The sultan was just having a new house built, although his old one was still in perfect preservation. He would not inhabit it any more because his father had died in it. I rather think this was not the effect of sensibility, but of superstition,—for I have never among these people seen any signs of sorrow for the dead.

Near the capital lie the graves of the princely family—simple stone-covered monuments, sometimes standing in a small stone hall.

On the 20th of May I left Macassar in the steamer Benda, to land for the last time on the hospitable shores of Java, where we arrived after a passage of two days and a half, and came to anchor in the roads of Surabaya. During my first stay at this place I had become acquainted with Madame Brumond, wife of Domine Brumond, and she had been so kind as to invite me to make her house my home on my return from the Moluccas and Celebes. The Resident, Mr. Van Perez, with whom I formerly stayed, had since been summoned to Batavia, to fill the office of Counsellor of India, one of the next



in dignity to that of Governor-General. There are four of these counsellors, each with a yearly salary of 36,000 rupees.

I met with such a cordial reception from my new friends, and, during an illness that unfortunately attacked me here, such kind care, that I had no feeling of being a stranger in a far country.

To the fever that had troubled me from time to time ever since I had left Sumatra, was now associated an affection of the back, the effect, I believe, of the toils and hardships I had undergone in my many wanderings in the Moluccas and Celebes. This illness embittered much my residence at Surabaya, and obliged me to renounce my project of a visit to the volcano of Brumō and other places. I merely employed the time of my convalescence in making myself acquainted with Surabaya and its environs.

With Mr. Brumond for my good and courteous *cicerone*, I began my tour of inspection with the mosque, which is the finest in Java, and was built in quite recent times by a Dutch architect. It has a very handsome effect, though its style is neither pure Moorish nor Gothic, but a mixture of those and other styles. It forms, with the two minarets and the fine forty-feet long aisle connecting them, a

kind of octagon. The building itself is of brick, but the front of the roof, as well as the entrances, are adorned with handsome wood carving. The attendants did not refuse to admit us into the interior, but required us to pull off our shoes; Mr. Brumond, however, considering my recent illness, did not like me to do this, but gave the servant of the mosque a silver rupee, that had somehow the effect of obviating the profanation of my *chaussure*, and enabling us to proceed without any further difficulty.

The interior was nothing more than a handsome hall, with a small pulpit, some lamps, mats, and a great many brass spittoons.

These last articles strike the eye of a stranger not very agreeably; but these siri-chewers cannot do without spitting, and in such a holy place they must not spit on the ground.

From the mosque we went to the neighbouring Malay campan, which did not please me at all. The bamboo huts, which are not here built upon piles, stand in two rows, forming a narrow street. The filth and litter of every house is thrown before the door, and towards evening swept together and burnt. We happened to come unto the campan just as this operation was going on, and could hardly get through the street for the smoke and stench it occasioned. I wonder

how it must look here in the rainy season, when they cannot sycep and burn! It is not surprising that the people are constantly troubled with fevers and cutaneous diseases.

The huts are extraordinarily small and oppressive, without windows, and with an entrance so low that you cannot get in without stooping. In the interior each of these snails' houses is divided into three parts, which are really nothing but holes. The first hole, the only one into which (by the open door) some light enters, contains a sleeping place on the right and left, and during the day serves as a workshop or sitting-room. The second hole contains on one side the sleeping place of the master of the house, and on the opposite one a wooden bench. The third hole is the fireplace. In each of these there is only just room enough to get through.

The furniture consists of some mats, cushions, earthen pots, and a wooden chest upon wheels, containing all the most valuable possessions of the family, clothes, weapons, trinkets, &c., and which, in case of fire, can be easily rolled out.

The people appeared to me now much less ugly than I had thought them when I first came to Borneo, Java, &c.; for as I had now for more than a year seen little else than Malays, habit had begun

to manifest its levelling influence. The ugliest thing appears less ugly in time; and, in the same way, the most beautiful landscape does not make half as much impression when you have seen it often, as it did the first time.

In the evening we paid a visit to the Chinese campan, which, with its pretty houses and remarkable cleanliness, forms a favourable contrast to that of the Malays. The houses are built of brick, but are as neat and white as if the whole campan had been that moment finished. They are not large, but enough so to lodge even a numerous family with convenience. Neither windows nor doors are wanting, the former provided with handsome balconies, and all the wood and framework painted in dark oil-colours. The front of the house is encircled by a veranda, from which you enter a reception-room, which takes up the whole length of the house, and where you find the ground covered with matting and the walls with looking glasses and pictures, and a sufficient number of tables, chairs, and presses. In the background are doors leading into the ordinary sitting-room, and almost in every house there is a small altar in the state apartment.

As we entered several of the houses we found the inhabitants already seated at supper. The wives of

the Chinese, like those of the Malays, are excluded from their company at meals, and dine and sup in the kitchen, or in their own little chambers. The table was covered with a white cloth; there were plates, glasses, and bottles upon it, as well as good food; one could have joined them in the meal with pleasure, while when the Malays eat they are disgusting to look at, crouching on the ground wherever they may happen to be, and cramming handfuls of rice into their wide-open jaws.

The Chinese in the towns are merchants or artisans; they are unwearied in their industry, but not unwilling to allow themselves some domestic conveniences and comforts. The Malays, on the contrary, live, even when they are opulent, in the same wretched manner as the poor, and in equal dirt and destitution.

The only expense and luxury of the rich is in costly arms and gold and silver trinkets, which they lock up and preserve carefully, so that it is only on extraordinary occasions, or on special request, that you ever get to see them. Their ordinary costume is an old sarang, and a dirty handkerchief round the head. Malays who have received appointments under government, as regents and so forth, do indeed form an exception, as they generally en-

deavour to vie in their expenses and manner of life with the Dutch Residents.

The next day we visited the great Malay cemetery, part of which is called "the holy." It is not only surrounded by a wall, but the interior is divided into many compartments, also enclosed by walls or palisades, and, according to the holiness or the high rank of the persons reposing there, kept more or less in order. There are here many graves of sultans, from the "good old times," when sultans reigned in Surabaya; but they are all extremely simple, consisting only of a slab of stone, sometimes upright, mostly damaged or sunk in. Some of these graves are regarded as so sacred that among the lower classes of Surabaya no marriage is concluded without the bridal pair coming hither to beg a blessing on the union in a short prayer. We were lucky enough when we came to meet one of these parties. The bride, a rather corpulent and very ugly girl of twelve, was carried in a small litter, open at both sides, in order that she might be seen in her bridal finery. She wore a silk sarang that reached only to a little above the hips, and thence upwards she was naked, but painted all over with yellow colour that looked like a tightly fitting *tricot*; and head, neck and arms were decorated, or rather loaded, with orna-

ments. Neither the silk sarang nor the ornaments were probably the property of the bride, but merely hired for the occasion. She was accompanied by many women and girls, and the bridegroom, a handsome young fellow of about twenty, by a troop of lads and men. He was neatly dressed, but not differently from his companions.

Besides this wedding of a pair belonging to the lower class, I was present at another during my stay in Surabaya, where the parties were of higher rank, — the bride being the sister of a regent. The festival in this case lasted several days, and the first ceremonies took place in the temple; at which I could not be present, as I had the fever on that day. The bride does not follow the bridegroom to his house on this first day, but returns to her own. On the second the festival is celebrated in the house of the bride, and towards evening she is brought in solemn procession to her husband. Foremost in the troop came many young men and boys of the lower class in their common dresses. They carried palm branches on high poles, with coloured handkerchiefs fluttering like flags in the breeze; after them came musicians with gongs and drums, and then a kind of body-guard with very heavy spears, one division of which wore dark-brown, and the other light, sarangs,

which hung in abundant folds to the middle of the leg. The upper parts of their bodies and their feet were painted of a light yellow, and on their heads they wore a sort of crown of gold or brass plate. They had a very gay, and at the same time martial, appearance. Between every two divisions there was music. The bridegroom came driving in a European carriage with four horses, and accompanied by two female relations. On arriving at the house, the company and attendants ranged themselves in two lines, between which, with bowed head and downcast eyes, walked the bridegroom to the hall of reception, where the bride, surrounded by women and girls, was sitting on a beautiful carpet. Silently, without any salutation, without even raising his eyes, the bridegroom took his place at her side, and both remained till nine o'clock sitting as mute and motionless as statues.

Bride and bridegroom were dressed very nearly alike, in long silk sarangs embroidered with gold; but the bridegroom had the upper part of his body naked and painted yellow, while the bride was closely covered with yellow silk. Her arms only were naked and painted yellow. Both had, with other decorations, wreaths of melatte on their heads, and three strings of these flowers falling from the



temple to the breast. The bridal pair was surrounded by friends and relations, but all sat dumb and motionless. At eight o'clock tea and confectionery were served, and the company opened their mouths to eat and drink, but still not for any other purpose. Not one word was spoken. On this day the bride is given to the bridegroom, but he is not yet allowed to take her home, but must pass even the third evening in her parents' house.

Here, as in Celebes, it is not the custom for girls to marry very young amongst persons of wealth and rank. The usual age is between eighteen and twenty, and in many cases the bride is first seen by the bridegroom in the mosque.\*

Another great fête is usually held by the rich Javanese when a youth has completed his school education, when his relations and teachers assemble, and the former question him about all that he has learned.

Of the public institutions in Surabaya, the Hospital is in every respect the one that pleased me best. It is the most complete and well arranged that I have ever seen; and that is saying much, for in all

\* Among the European residents extremely early marriages have been so common, that the government has found it necessary to prohibit their taking place before the *fifteenth* year!

the Dutch settlements the hospitals are admirable. This one has room for 800 patients; it is divided into several departments in separate buildings, each surrounded by meadows and gardens full of trees and flowers. In one of these gardens I saw a water palm, the most remarkable of the family to be found in Java and Sumatra. The leaves are from twelve to fifteen feet long, and shoot out singly from the stem, which is scarcely fifteen feet high. Exactly at the top they fold one over the other so as to form a most perfect and regular fan. The stem and the lower parts of the leaves contain water. This palm is a native of Madagascar, but in Java and Sumatra is only cultivated as an ornament in the gardens of Europeans.

The prisons of Surabaya are, like those in Batavia, so organised that one might almost say the humanity towards criminals was carried too far. The Dutch soldiers\* have handsome rooms, pleasant gardens, and excellent food. Native criminals are kept together in large rooms and employed in various kinds of work (sometimes outside the prison), and receive a few doits for siri. None of the prisoners are chained, but the natives wear an iron ring round the

\* The native soldiers are not put into the same prisons with the Dutch.

neck. Attempts at escape are, however, very rare. The natives in general are said to stand much more in awe of the laws than the Europeans.

The prisons were very full when I visited them, having no less than 1200 criminals, mostly thieves, confined in them. Very serious crimes are punished by banishment to various islands, particularly the Moluccas, where the convicts work for the government or are let out to private persons.

There are here some works for the putting together and repair of steam engines, which I also visited. These are very necessary in Java, as there are many steam-boats, sugar-mills, and other establishments, for which engines are required to be kept in order. They could, indeed, be made altogether here, but would cost much more than in Europe; for the natives are not compelled by the government to work in the factories, and could only be induced to do so by high payment. In these works 600 men are constantly employed; they are all natives but the superintendents, and receive from 30 to 120 doits a day.

Not less complete in its department is the Arsenal, where muskets are made, and all kinds of cannon and bomb-shells cast. Gun carriages are also made for the artillery, and all kinds of saddlery work for the

army carried on here almost wholly by native workmen. They are found very docile, especially skilful in imitative works, quiet, industrious, and not given to gossiping, quarrelling, and drinking. In both these factories I saw well-finished articles of various kinds that had proceeded from the hands of natives; among other things I remember a great state seal, engraved on brass, which could not have been better done by the best seal engraver of Europe.\*

I saw also the magnificent dry dock, for the repair even of the largest ships. The basin is connected with the sea by a canal; and by means of a steam engine the whole of the water can be pumped out of it in the course of five or six hours. When there are no government vessels undergoing repair, trading ones are received, and a certain charge made for them per day, according to the tonnage. A ship of 1200 tons was lying in the basin just then, and had to pay 300 rupees a day for the place.

This establishment must be very profitable to the

\* I saw at the house of Colonel Van Schierbrandt, in Batavia, a complete set of furniture in the Gothic style, that he had had made in Surabaya. The chairs, sofas, &c., were most elaborately carved, and the upholstery work equally well finished. But Colonel Schierbrandt had had to give the workmen drawings of the very minutest details; from their own invention they can do nothing.

government, for the cost of maintaining it is very small, and there is never any deficiency of ships wanting repair.

I was, as I have said, so unfortunate as not to be able to visit either the volcanic mountain of Brumo, or the "Valley of the Dead," of which some travellers have given so fearful a description, and where the renowned Upas-tree stands, the exhalations from which were stated in the old accounts to be so poisonous and deadly, both to man and beast, that no living creature could approach it.

The juice of this tree, as the story went, was used to poison arrows, and the sultans of the country used to send only condemned criminals to collect it. Those who had the almost unlooked-for good fortune to return unharmed were pardoned, and absolved from any further punishment. If, however, they did not take care in approaching the tree not to get to leeward of it, but allowed the wind to blow towards them, their death was certain. Further, it was stated that the valley was full of skeletons of men and animals; that if a bird flew over it, it fell down dead, &c. Now I have been assured, on good authority, that there is not one syllable of truth in all this! There does, indeed, stand a upas-tree, in a certain little valley; but men and animals may

approach it, and, let the wind blow how it likes, without suffering any damage. Here and there it appears there do issue certain noxious gases from apertures in the earth, just as they do in the Grotto dei Cani at Naples, but they do not rise more than two feet. Little dogs are sometimes taken there, in order to exhibit this phenomenon to strangers, and they are seized with convulsions, and would die if they were not taken away.

In Java I never saw a upas-tree, but several in Borneo, to which I often came near enough. The people certainly did warn me not to touch it, as they said it would cause my hand to swell, and pain me for some hours; but, probably, even this much may not be true, though I thought it better not to try.

Speaking of marvels, I am reminded of rather a puzzling occurrence that took place in Java a few years ago, and caused such a sensation that it attracted the attention of Government.

In the Residence of Cheribon was a small house which the natives declared to be quite full of ghosts. As soon as ever the evening set in, there began in the rooms a continual throwing of stones and spitting of siri, without the perpetrator in either case being visible to mortal eye. The stones and the expecto-

ration fell quite close to the people, but without exactly touching any of them; though this undoubtedly formidable shower seemed to be somehow specially directed against a certain little child. So much was said of this inexplicable affair, that at last the Government authorities commissioned a trustworthy officer to inquire into it, and find it out. He had the house surrounded by soldiers, so that nobody could go in or out, and then entered and seated himself, with the child on his lap. He had no sooner done so, however,—according to most authentic history,—than the shower of stones and siri set in as hard as ever, and fell close all round both officer and child, though still without touching them. Every hole and corner of the house was then searched, but of course without making any discovery. The officer could not get to the bottom of the mystery, but sagaciously bethought himself of having the stones marked, carried to a considerable distance, and buried—but in vain. The next night at the usual hour the customary projectiles began to fall about; and, what was more, the very stones that had been so cunningly marked and hidden underground. At last, however, the Dutch Government proved more than a match for the ghost, and checkmated him by having the house pulled down; but the

mystery who threw those stones, and who chewed the siri and ejected that preternatural saliva, will remain profound and inexplicable to the end of time.

On my return to Batavia I felt rather undetermined as to which way I should now direct my pilgrimage. Of India I had seen what was best worth seeing, on my first voyage round the world; towards Australia I did not feel any great attraction, and there was also no vessel going that way; but there were in the harbour two for North America, one for Baltimore and the other for San Francisco and California. The American Consul, Mr. Reed, kindly undertook to negotiate for my passage with the captain, but soon brought me the pleasing intelligence that the captain of the vessel going to San Francisco had offered to take me with him on this long passage — 10,000 leagues — without making any charge whatever.

It was with almost melancholy feelings that I took leave of the Dutch Indian settlements. In those countries I had seen many of the magnificent wonders of nature, and had become acquainted with new races, an acquaintance that, though purchased with many toils and hardships, had offered me most interesting subjects of observation; and not only had the eye and the mind found thus an ever varied source



of enjoyment in this journey, but my heart had been warmed by the kindness of the many excellent friends I had met with among the Dutch residents, who had been at all times ready to befriend me with word and deed. To them, and to the few of my German fellow-countrymen whom I had occasionally met, I owe it that, even in countries where no European had ever yet been seen, among the wild Dyaks, Battakers, and Alforas, my travelling was not only possible, but in many cases easy and agreeable.

As long as I live will the remembrance of this journey never be effaced from my mind, nor the goodness of those far distant friends, to whom I shall probably never have any other opportunity than this of returning my heartfelt acknowledgments.

## CHAP. II.

VOYAGE FROM BATAVIA TO CALIFORNIA. — THE CITY OF WONDERS. — HIGH PRICES. — GAMBLING HOUSES. — AMERICAN JUDICIAL PROCEEDINGS. — AMERICAN TRAVELLING COMPANIONS. — THE PLAZA SACRAMENTO. — VISIT TO GENERAL SUTTER. — MARY'S VILLE. — BROWN'S VALLEY. THE GOLD WASHINGS OF THE YUBA RIVER. — THE INDIANS.

IN the voyage from Batavia to San Francisco you traverse nearly half the circumference of the earth. A hundred and fifty miles of this distance is through the Sea of Java, 2000 through that of China, and the remainder across the Pacific Ocean.

On the afternoon of the 6th of July I went, accompanied by my friends Mr. and Mrs. Steuerwald, to the boat that was to convey me to the ship, the "Seneca," of Baltimore, commanded by Captain Feenhagen.

I was now to see a new country and a new nation. Could I expect that the good fortune that had

hitherto attended all my wanderings would still remain faithful to me? I could wish no more than that I should be as well received as I had hitherto been, and one day find my way back to my now far distant country, and to the arms of the beloved relatives I had left there.

*July 7th.* Early in the morning the anchor was raised, and on the ninth and tenth we were entering the Gaspar Strait, formed by the two small islands, Banca and Biliton, and leading into the Chinese Sea; and then all the arms on board were furnished up and put in order, to make ready for the reception of any pirates that we might happen to meet with.

On the 12th we crossed the Equator, and the sea was so smooth that the captain of a ship that had been sailing near us came on board to pay us a visit. But scarcely had he left us again, when there arose so sudden and violent a storm, that we felt considerable anxiety as to whether he would be able to get back to his ship; and, indeed, he did not find it a very easy task. On the afternoon, we had another storm, and took in all sail, as we were in dread of a typhoon. The next day, with the weather still very stormy, we passed between Luzon and Formosa into the Pacific Ocean; and then, for two long, long

months, we saw nothing but sky and water: the only living creatures that we caught even a glimpse of were a few seagulls that came, from time to time, to flutter round our sails.

On this voyage I was once more attacked by intermittent fever, which could be attributed neither to the diet nor any other cause then present.

We lived so well that I had no occasion, during the whole journey, to take a morsel of salt meat; my sleeping cabin was spacious, quite a little room, indeed; and all my wants were most attentively and generously provided for by our kind captain. What a difference between this voyage and that from London to the Cape of Good Hope, with Captain Brodie. I still shudder when I think of that!

At length, on the 26th of September, sounded the long-desired cry of "Land! land!" and in the evening the coast of California lay spread out before our eyes. And yet, though I had now been three months in the saline prison, and for more than two had seen no land, this coast did not make a pleasing impression on me, but, on the contrary, rather a melancholy one. It was, beyond all description, desolate and dead. Naked sand-hills rose steeply on all sides. No tree, no shrub, not so much as a blade

of grass, varied the melancholy colour of the corpse-like waste.

And to this desert men voluntarily banish themselves for the chance of finding a lump of gold! What must a place be, if it had but this attraction, to keep off the avaricious whites?

*August 27th.* In the morning the pilot came on board to take us through the *Golden Gate* — that is the name given to the entrance into the Bay of San Francisco. Although wearing something of the same character as the part of the coast we had first seen, the shores of the bay are not quite destitute of beauty. They are surrounded by mountains, hills, and rocks, which form the most various groups — now advancing and now receding; and the Bay is adorned by many little islands, which form bays, basins, and straits in miniature; so that the eye is constantly amused and the attention fixed.

The length of this bay is forty-five miles, and its greatest breadth not more than twelve. We glided on between the Goat and Bird Islands, and at length cast anchor before the town itself, which lies twelve miles from the entrance and extends in a wide circuit over many sand-hills. These scattered masses of small houses have, in fact, hardly yet a right to be called a town; but, as the place is rising with aston-

ishing rapidity, and will certainly spread many miles in all directions, it will not be possible to refuse it the name much longer.

The real town consists of the portions that lie close to the shore, where the wooden quays and warehouses are. The population of the whole is estimated at about 60,000.

The houses in the suburbs and environs are extremely small, and built of wood, and there has not been the slightest attempt at order and regularity in their construction, — some lying in hollows, others being perched at the top of sand-hills. But the town does possess some large stone houses, two and three stories high, — some of them lying in places that, at no very distant period, were covered by the sea, and a sea deep enough for large vessels to anchor in.

As the sand-hills rise almost perpendicularly out of the water, it was found necessary to carry part of them away, and with the sand thus thrown down to drive back the sea, and so form an artificial level for the business part of the town. These works, as well as the wooden quays and wharves, surprised me more than the large houses; but both must be regarded as gigantic undertakings, when it is considered how short a time has elapsed

since the country has been taken possession of by Americans\* and Europeans, and how immoderately expensive all kind of labour was, and is still. These quays and wharves, were they connected together in one line, would certainly extend many miles, for there are great numbers of them. The sea is, near the coast, so deep, that ships of 2000 and 3000 tons can come quite up to it.

California, as is known, formerly belonged to Mexico, and was only taken in 1846 by the North Americans, after a war of one year. In the 7th of July following, at Monterey, it was solemnly incorporated among the North American United States. The population, at that time, was 150,000, of which the greater part were Indians; now it is 300,000.

The first gold-bed was discovered in July, 1848, at Colonia, in the district of Eldorado, by General Sutter, in drawing a mill-stream. The shovel struck upon some hard substance, which at first the workmen were going to throw aside without examination; but the great weight of it attracted attention, and, on closer inspection, it was found to be a lump

\* By Americans, people here always understand the inhabitants of the United States. The other nations of America are called by the names of their respective nations, as Mexicans, Brazilians, &c.

of solid gold. The amount of gold exported from this country in 1849 was to the value of 20,000,000 dollars; the next year, it was 40,000,000, and since then it has averaged 5,000,000 a month; all which treasures find their way to North America and Europe.

But I must now go back to my arrival. I had no letters of introduction, and could not, therefore, turn to any one for assistance; and I knew too well that this place was excessively dear, and more adapted for merchants than for travellers, whose purses are always being emptied and never filled. I wandered about the first day, from morning till night, to find some tolerably reasonable lodging, and at last went back to the ship without having succeeded. The worthy Captain Feenhagen begged me to make it my home as long as he stayed in the harbour; but the same evening I received an invitation, for the whole time of my residence in the town, from the English house of Colquhoun, Smith, and Morton. They were entire strangers to me, but had become acquainted with my name from some of my former travels; and they had no sooner seen it among the new arrivals than they sent the invitation on board, and were afterwards ready to offer me every possible friendly service. These were among



the families that I afterwards found it most painful to part from.

The Austrian Consul, M. Vischer (?), also showed me much attention; but this gentleman forms an agreeable exception to most of the Austrian consuls I have met with on my travels, and I can only wish there were many like him. He has with every one the same amiable reputation.

The low, narrow dwellings in which people live here, appeared to me at first very oppressive and uncomfortable. The largest apartments would scarcely allow of twelve or fifteen persons sitting down to table; and of the smaller ones I need not speak—they really seemed destined for Lilliputians. This struck me so much the more, as, in the last place I was in, Batavia, the rooms are so large that you could put a whole Californian house into one of them. These dolls' houses are usually divided into three or four little spaces, called rooms, most richly furnished—indeed, so richly, that the occupants can scarcely find room, among the fine furniture, for themselves. The floors are covered with costly carpets, the walls with looking-glasses; but even in the large houses the rooms are mostly very small—especially the bedrooms, according, I was told, to American custom.

The shops, on the other hand, are remarkably large and handsome, and many might vie with some of the first in European cities, so rich are they in goods, so spacious, and elegant in their fittings.

The finest shops are in the *Sacramento-Klé*, in Montgomery Street, and on the Square, or *Plaza*. Of coffee-houses, taverns, dancing-rooms, and gambling-houses, the town has but too many, and there are already six theatres, in which plays are performed in English, French, German, and Spanish. There are thirteen newspapers, and eighteen printers, without counting the smaller ones, which sometimes open one day, and shut the next. Churches and chapels there are, too, of all imaginable sects, to the number of twenty-six, but few worth noticing.

Much social recreation is going on at San Francisco, and whoever likes that sort of amusement may certainly pass every evening in public and private circles, and get more invitations than he can accept. The hospitalities of the table are very abundant; but I could not help remarking the singular deficiency of dinner napkins, which I afterwards found could be accounted for from the enormous price of washing. The charge is, for one dozen of large and small things together, three dollars, or twelve shillings; and it is therefore customary

for families to give out only large things to be washed, and to avoid as much as possible all superfluous expenditure of linen. In general it is common here, on account of the enormous price of certain things, to find the most extreme economy on some points associated with the most lavish expense in others. Many families with five or six children keep only one servant, while at the same time their furniture, dress, parties, and so forth are in a style that appear quite inconsistent with such small attendance.

I will mention the prices of a few articles at the time of my arrival, though I fear some of my readers will scarcely believe me.

A house with five or six small rooms in one of the best situations let for 250 dollars, or fifty pounds, *a month*, one in an out-of-the-way place for thirty. The large fashionable shops paid a rent of from 140 to 160 pounds a month.

The wages of a maid or man servant was ten or twelve pounds *per month*, with board. Carpenters and masons earned eight dollars a day, dressmakers four. The price of a fowl was about eight shillings, of a dozen of eggs four shillings, of a turkey two pounds. Beef was a shilling a pound, mutton or pork two shillings, milk a shilling a quart, salt butter three

shillings, and so forth. In the hotels you could be boarded and lodged for 100 dollars a month, but the hire of a carriage was six dollars an hour, and of a riding-horse, whether for an hour or half a day, five dollars; and on a Sunday these prices were doubled. Ten dollars was the charge for putting you on board a steam-boat; and going to a ball cost twenty dollars, or five pounds, for coach hire. If you had your own horse and kept him at a livery stable, you paid fifty dollars a month for his keep; and if you sent a porter on a message you had to give him a dollar. Even these prices had been exceeded by those of the preceding year. Many manufactured articles were at the same time proportionably cheap, in consequence of the enormous quantities sent to the port—quantities that far exceeded the wants of the population\*; and many European and American houses are said to have suffered, in consequence, considerable losses.

The import duties are also very high for articles of ordinary consumption,—from twenty to thirty per cent., and so on, up to a hundred; but this only for spirituous liquors.

The ground for the town, as well as for the imme-

\* The goods of all kinds sent here would have sufficed for a population of 1,000,000, and it has never here exceeded 300,000.

diate environs, was divided by the government and sold in lots of 150 feet square; and those who had the good fortune to get them in the beginning, might, with a few of these lots, become wealthy. From 5000 to 8000 dollars were given for a piece of ground now worth 150,000; and a three-storied brick house, built on a whole lot and at a corner, that would have cost 200,000 dollars, lets for 130,000 dollars *a year*.

San Francisco has been six times on fire, and most of these conflagrations are supposed to have been purposely kindled. The two greatest occurred in 1852. On the 4th of May of this year, that part of the town was burnt in which the greater part of the wealth of the city was laid up in warehouses, namely, from the corner of Montgomery Street to Korney Street. The second fire, which happened in July, laid the western quarter of the town in ashes; and, while the fire was still raging, there came speculators, offering to hire the land for three or four years. The bargains were struck, and they began to build again *wooden* houses, upon ground that was scarcely cold; and when the term of the contract was expired, the speculators had gained enough to be content to leave the houses to the owner of the land.

San Francisco is unanimously declared the City

of Wonders, and the Americans maintain that its rapid rise, and repeated rebuilding after the fires, are among the most wonderful things the world has seen. There are, indeed, only two forces capable of effecting such wonders—gold and despotism. The former has been the lever in this case: for the thirst of gold, which is the greatest of despots, has drawn people hither from all corners of the earth, and dwellings of wood and stone have arisen for them as if by magic. But what are all these simple works compared with the antique cities of Hindostan, the ruins of which even still attest their magnificence, and which are stated to have been built in a no less incredibly short time. Look, for instance, at Fahpoor Sikri, a town full of the most beautiful palaces, covered with sculptures,—of magnificent temples, with minarets, and with high-arched gates, and so forth,—the circumference of which, of six miles, was surrounded by a massive stone wall, forty feet high; and all this was done in less than ten years. Such works as this are indeed marvellous, for they must have required a whole population of artists and architects for their execution.

The wonders of San Francisco consist of quite ordinary, little dwelling-houses, for the building of which the gold-mines of California have furnished,

and continue to furnish, sufficient means. What most excited my wonder in this wonderful city is, that for two great requirements no provision at all has been made—namely, for clean level streets and for lighting.

Of the hillocks, holes, and unevenness of all kinds in the streets of this town, no one who has not seen it can form an idea. Here you go up steps; there down steps. In one place the road has been raised, but, on going a little further, you find it as nature made it. Some places have been dug out, and whole mountains of bricks, stones, wood, lime, and sand left lying in the road, with no light near them at night, to give warning to the unwary. This makes the roads, after dark, not only for driving, but even for foot-passengers, positively dangerous; and especially is this the case on the wooden quays, for the sea beneath them has not been filled up, and the boards are so worn and rotten that they often break in. Even in the day-time caution is requisite on account of the frequent holes; and at night it is no uncommon incident for passengers to fall in, and be never seen again. In the finest and most frequented parts of the town, you see old clothes and rags, crockery, boots, bottles, boxes, dead dogs and cats, and enormous rats (in which the town is parti-

cularly rich), and all kinds of filth flung before the doors. Constantinople itself may really be considered clean in comparison. There, there are at least men and dogs, who both do something towards the cleanliness of the streets,—the former by picking up the clothes and rags, the latter by devouring much of the refuse.

To all this must be added the boundless liberty of every man to do precisely what he likes. Carts will often be stopped in the middle of the narrow causeway which leads across the—in rainy weather—bottomless mud of the streets. Horsemen will tie up their steeds before the doors, obliging the unhappy passengers to get down into the dirt, in order to go round them. Sometimes the inconveniences are more serious. One morning as I was walking in the street, a passenger who met me suddenly called out “A Bear! a bear!” I could not think what he meant; for that it should be really a bear in the streets of a populous town seemed quite incredible. I looked round in all directions, however, and, on looking back, beheld actually a bear running towards me. He was, indeed, fastened to a rope, and the rope to a caravan; but they had allowed him so very long a tether, that he was quite at liberty to introduce himself among the passengers on both sides of the way. The owner was not even



troubling himself to warn them, and I had barely time to make my escape.

A walk in San Francisco, in short, either for business or pleasure, is a real penance. In what is called the business part of the town, you can hardly make your way through for the throng of carts, carriages, horsemen, and pedestrians; and where the streets are not paved with boards\*, you have to wade through sand a foot deep; and, all the while, you have no better prospect before your eyes than the naked, monotonous sand-hills.

Truly it is only those who place all happiness in money who could submit, for the sake of gain, to live in such a place, and perhaps forget, at last, that there are such things as trees, or a green carpet lovelier than that which covers the gold-laden gaming tables.

In the spring I was told the sand-hills are covered with a beautiful and luxuriant Flora; but the kings of the vegetable world, majestic trees and elegant shrubs, can no season bring in this country.

The horses and mules in San Francisco are extraordinarily beautiful. They, as well as the oxen and cows, have all been brought overland, "over the

\* There are roads in the neighbourhood of the town that are paved for miles with planks.

Plains," from the United States. Both horses and mules are tall and powerful; there are horses that can go with you sixty miles in one day\*, and mules that can carry three hundredweight. Even the horses in omnibuses and hackney carriages are very fine. Some of the latter, indeed, can hardly be exceeded, and the cost of a carriage and horses of this kind is estimated at about 800*l*.

The means of rapid and easy communication are abundant in San Francisco. Steam-boats traverse the bay and go up and down the rivers. Stage-coaches, which change horses like post-chaises, run in all directions, and a telegraph-line is already opened, that passes over St. José and Sacramento for more than 150 miles.

One evening I went to visit the public places of amusement, and I must own I found most interest in the gaming houses, having never seen any public ones before. What first struck the eye was the extraordinary mixture of company in them. A most daintily dressed gentleman would be seated next to a miner in his red flannel shirt, with boots covered with mud, or a sailor who had not even washed the tar off his hands; but both the dandies and the dir-

\* When miles are mentioned English miles are always meant.

ties had heaps of gold and hard dollars lying before them. Two years ago, I was told, you never saw any money but gold. In no face, not even in that of the lively and excitable Frenchman or Mexican, did I ever observe the agitation either of hope or fear, and I could not tell by looking at the players who had been favoured and who ill-treated by fortune. With respect to the furniture and decorations of these houses, it is obviously intended not only to encourage directly the passion for gaming, but also to intoxicate the senses, and entice to all kinds of sensuality. Noisy music resounds through the spacious saloons, licentious seductive pictures hang on the walls, and beautiful girls are seated as lures here and there at the tables. I have travelled far and wide through the world, and have been among many nations who, partly from the effect of climate, and partly from the absence of religion and of education, are much given to sensual excesses; but such open and shameless enticements to evil I have never seen anywhere else, and I really believe they are only found among Christian nations and under civilised governments. I cannot of course take upon me to assert that immorality does not exist in an equal degree among others, but certainly it is not thus scandalously paraded. Even the Chinese gaming houses were more decent than the American.

Of the other places of public entertainment and the dancing-rooms, I will not speak.

The superfluity of money in San Francisco is so great, and the prices so high, that no copper money is in use at all, and the people have no wish that there should be. Every one can earn enough to meet all demands, and, in fact, the demand for labour still exceeds the supply. And yet there passes no night in which you do not hear of robbery; in all the bed-rooms you see pistols hanging up; and no one goes out of an evening without a sword-stick or other weapon; for even in the streets of the town robberies and murders are of no very uncommon occurrence. The police is so badly organised, that the perpetrator of a theft is hardly ever discovered; and, indeed, if he were, the punishments are so slight, that no one fears them. A few weeks' imprisonment serve for almost every offence; and even murderers have seldom much cause to dread the law. They generally go themselves to the magistrate, and relate the occurrence, making it out, of course, that the act was merely committed in self-defence. If they know how to go to work, — that is to say, if they use their gold freely, — they are very often not so much as imprisoned.

Whilst I was myself at San Francisco, a gentleman

with whom I was personally acquainted shot his servant. The wound was not immediately mortal, but the bullet had penetrated the man's side, and could not be found for three days. The master went to the magistrate, told the story his own way, and declared that he had done it in self-defence. He said the servant was given to drinking, and that while he was intoxicated he, the master, had given him warning; that thereupon the servant had been much irritated, and had answered that he did not wish to stay, but that, before he left the house, he would shoot him, — "or," he added, "either I will shoot you, or you shall shoot me," and at the same time threatened his master with his fist; whereupon the master had seized a pistol and shot the servant.

The murderer was locked up for a day, but the second he was released, on his promising not to leave the district, and on giving bail.

As I left Francisco shortly afterwards, I do not know what was the end of the affair, but I was assured that even if the servant died the master would get off with at most a few weeks' imprisonment.

Two years ago matters were still worse, and even in broad daylight you were not secure of your life. If any one conceived a hatred to another, or had a dispute with him, he shot his antagonist in the public

street. Duels were settled at once without further ceremony on the open square, and the parties shot at each other without the passers-by attempting to interfere. Now and then it happened that, instead of hitting the antagonist, the ball struck a person who had nothing to do with the affair ; but this was merely an accident, and could not be helped. No one was called to account for it.

Much more severity was shown at that time towards thieves, not indeed by the law or its executors, for justice was fast asleep,—even faster, if possible, than at the present day,—but by private persons, who formed a society for the execution of justice on their own responsibility, or by Lynch Law, as it was called.\* The first thief they caught they hung up at once on the Plaza; and this summary proceeding had so much effect that for a long time there were no more thefts.

This Plaza, it will be seen, is a very remarkable spot to the people of the town, though it no longer serves as the theatre of these terrible scenes, but, it is to be hoped, for the prevention, if not for the punishment, of crime ; as a most worthy and excellent missionary, Mr. Taylor, preaches there every Sunday afternoon powerful and admirable sermons.

\* Lynch Law is frequently exercised in the United States.

I heard several of them, and was always much gratified; he spoke so directly to the minds and hearts of his congregation, and chose such suitable examples from every-day life. It was easy to see that he had become a missionary from a true and heartfelt vocation; the people listened to him with deep attention, and many a pressure of the hand was given him as a reward. In my opinion Christian nations have at present far more need of good missionaries than the heathen.

Of the public institutions I visited the Prison and the Hospital, but I had much difficulty in getting the requisite permission.

When I showed the director of the Prison my card of admission, it gave rise to an absurd misunderstanding. As no one in San Francisco would think of taking up his time with visiting places of this kind unless some special business called him to them, the director thought I had come to see some one confined there; and merely glancing at the paper I brought, without reading it, my name caught his eye, and after a little reflection he assured me that he did not think he had any criminal of that name under his care; whereupon of course the explanation followed.

The prison consists of some dark, damp rooms,

each intended for six persons, but so small that they can scarcely have room to lie down. There are neither benches nor bedsteads, and those who do not bring bolsters and coverings with them must do without. The food is good, consisting of soup, a piece of meat, and a sufficient quantity of excellent bread.

About six months before, the prison was one day visited by a very numerous party of between eighty and ninety men, who demanded to see it, and, when let in, seized on the keys and took possession of one of the criminals confined there, whom the people had long desired to see executed, but who, with the customary negligence of the government in these matters, would probably have escaped with a slight punishment. They took him out, and hung him immediately before the door of the prison.

The hospital is a tolerably good one, especially if the time of its erection is considered, the year 1849. Prices were then so enormous in San Francisco that it is surprising a sum could have been raised by private contribution large enough for the erection of a good hospital, with accommodation, such as it has at present, for 300 patients. Most of these are received gratuitously, and some few pay fifteen dollars a week, or twenty-five for a private room.



One thing that especially pleased me was; that incurable patients are not turned out, but kept till their death. Before the erection of this hospital, those who were unfortunate enough to fall sick could expect nothing better than to be carried into some corner, and there left to live or die, as they might. No one had time to pay them any attention, for gold, gold, nothing but gold, filled their every thought and every moment.

A very fine exhibition of vegetables, fruits, corn, and other natural productions of California, took place whilst I was there. It was under the auspices of a Mr. Warren, and displayed some surprising specimens. There was a pumpkin weighing 125 pounds, a beetroot 35 lbs., a turnip 25 lbs., a cauliflower 22 lbs., a carrot 6 lbs., a potatoe 4 lbs., and an onion 2 lbs. One of the cabbages measured  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet in diameter. There was wheat and barley 12 feet high, and with very fine full ears; maize which measured 17 feet in height, with three cobs, each containing from 550 to 600 grains. The fruits were less remarkable; but what a productive country might California become if the people could be induced to devote some attention to its culture!

Another interesting specimen of a different kind was that of a grand oak trunk, from the northern

regions of the peninsula. It was 250 feet high, and 97 in circumference at the base. It was supposed to be 1500 years old, and yet when felled it was found perfectly healthy. The bark, which was 18 inches thick, was taken off in strips, and in San Francisco, when put together again, it formed a handsome room; a section of the trunk was laid near it to convince the incredulous.

I made three excursions from San Francisco to the interior of California; the first to Sacramento, Mary's Ville, and the gold-mines of the Yuba river; the second to Crescent City and the Rogue-river Indians; and the third to St José. In the afternoon of the 3rd of October I embarked on board the beautiful steamer Senator, for Sacramento, 100 miles' journey.

The American steamers are the finest imaginable, and certainly deserve the title often given them of water palaces. They look indeed more like houses than ships. The river steamers especially are several stories high, with large doors, windows, and galleries; and the convenience and splendour of the internal fittings and furniture fully correspond with the impression made by the outside view. When you meet one of them at night on the water, they look like enchanted castles, for all their windows are

illuminated, and their chimneys vomit fire like volcanoes.

Late in the evening we turned into the Sacramento River, which is navigable up to the town for vessels of 1500 tons, but we only landed at five o'clock the next morning, when the passengers rushed with frantic haste to secure their places in the stage coaches or smaller steamers, so as to continue their journey without loss of time. I, too, followed their example, and hastened to seize a place in a stage coach to go to Grass Valley; but my haste was thrown away, for the coach I wanted had set off at four o'clock, so I had to change my plan and go on board a steamer bound for Mary's Ville, which was fifty miles further.

The time before the departure of the boat I employed in viewing the town, which lies on a sandy, dusty plain, in whose distant background only the dark outline of mountains is to be seen. The town contains 20,000 inhabitants, and offers, on a smaller scale, the same unfinished and unpleasing picture as San Francisco. According to the Americans, Sacramento is another "wonder of the world," as it has risen just as rapidly, and been just as often burnt down, as San Francisco.

At eleven o'clock we were off again, and, after

running a few miles, turned into the Feathers River, on which Mary's Ville lies. The shore continued so much the same that I soon turned from it, and went into the saloon to continue my observations on the company. This was the first time I had ever found myself in a large party of Americans; and as in the gambling houses of San Francisco, the first thing that struck me was the strange contrasts in dress. The ladies were all in grand state, and might have gone into full dressed parties without changing their travelling costume; but the case was widely different with the gentlemen. Some few were well dressed, but the majority wore jackets, often torn ones, dirty boots pulled up over their trowsers, and had hands so extraordinarily coarse and burnt,—even the best dressed gentlemen among them,—that they looked as if they belonged to the commonest ploughman.

The company passed the time in playing cards and chewing tobacco, without excepting even boys of ten and twelve\* years old; but they did not spit about at the dreadful rate described by many travellers. They had another practice, however, if possible still more abominable; namely, though they carried a pocket-handkerchief, of making use of their fingers instead of it.

I actually saw this atrocity committed by quite elegantly dressed men.

If, however, in these points they fell grievously short, in another they maintained without any exception the character of gentlemen.

The men, one and all, showed the utmost attention and politeness to our sex. Old or young, rich or poor, well or ill dressed, every woman was treated with respect and kindness; and in this the Americans are far in advance of my countrymen, and indeed of Europeans in general, who usually keep their civilities for youth, beauty, and fine clothes.

The company remained very little while at table, and spoke scarcely a word. They really did not give themselves time to eat their food properly, but bolted it burning hot and not half chewed, although nobody had anything to do when the meal was over. They seem to have got into the habit of regarding everything as business, and therefore to be performed with the utmost possible despatch. Nobody drank anything but water; but I am told the Americans prefer taking small drams of spirituous liquors, at various times of the day. I do not think, nevertheless, that so much is drank here as in England. Coffee and tea, too, were taken in moderate quantities, and not strong.

The passage to Mary's Ville was very long, for the river had at this time of year very little water, and

we were every moment getting upon sand-banks. Some hills now came into sight, and here and there we had glimpses of a mountain-chain.

I had to stop six miles before Mary's Ville at a farm belonging to General Sutter\*, and at ten o'clock at night I was put out on the shore, to find my way as I best could. Fortunately it was not far; but when I reached the hedge enclosing the garden half a dozen dogs rushed out upon me. I kept myself quiet, however, feeling pretty sure they would do nothing more than bark.

Everybody in the house had been fast asleep, but they were awakened by the noise of the dogs, and received me, unseasonable guest as I was, in the kindest manner.

General Sutter is a Swiss by birth, and not only discovered the gold mines, but has greatly distinguished himself as a soldier in the Mexican war. Since then he has lived on his large landed estates.

His youngest son, who is only twenty-two years of age, is already a colonel in the militia; but this is nothing uncommon in America. We Europeans find it very strange that so many important offices should be filled by quite young people, but the Americans

\* Every landed estate in America, of whatever dimensions, is called a farm.

think that when they understand their business, they are to be preferred to older ones, "as they are commonly more active, diligent, and persevering."

You find here men of seven or eight and twenty established as merchants, lawyers, captains of ships, &c., who have already earned a considerable fortune; but they have certainly entered into business very early.

I stayed two days at Rock Farm, where great quantities of corn and vegetables are raised, though the ground in the dry season looks like mere dust and sand, and one would fancy the greatest care was requisite to make anything grow; but I was told that, on the contrary, it is neither manured nor irrigated, and yet the corn it produces is fine and abundant. It must be remembered, however, that the ground was broken for the first time only a few years ago; it remains to be seen what it will look like fifty years hence.

I took a walk to a neighbouring forest with General Sutter's eldest son, who has considerable knowledge of botany; and I saw some beautiful varieties of the oak, in which California is said to be particularly rich, some very fine climbing plants, and great quantities of wild grape-vines, which wreath themselves round the trees up to the very topmost

boughs; but the grapes were small and not very sweet. The ground in the forest had not the smallest trace of grass or any green thing.

About twenty miles from Rock Farm rises a majestic chain of mountains, the highest point of which, said to be 14,000 feet, is called the Chasta.

Before you come to this chain, you see a range of rocks rising perpendicularly out of the plain, like a gigantic wall, and forming three principal peaks called the Three Butts.

On the 7th of October General Sutter had me taken to Mary's Ville, a little town lying at the confluence of the Feathers and Yuba rivers. A private individual has had a wooden bridge built, 120 feet long; but for every horse or head of cattle going over it he levies a toll of half a dollar.

Mary's Ville, though a newer place than Sacramento, contains already 6000 inhabitants, and boasts a theatre and two newspapers; and the shops are so over-full of goods that they might supply the wants of a population of ten times that number. Much is, of course, sent to the mining districts; but the articles of fashion and luxury mostly find customers only in the towns.

Almost as soon as I got to Mary's Ville I had the good fortune to meet Sir Henry Huntley, an



Englishman with whom I had become acquainted in San Francisco. This gentleman possesses quartz and gold mines at Brown's Valley, near the mountain-chain, fourteen miles from Mary's Ville, and has had a steam-mill erected for breaking the stones.

He was so kind as to take me with him to his land, and to show me the quartz mines, as well as the gold washings on the Yuba river, which lay six miles off. He settled only three months ago in Brown's Valley, and at that time the place was a perfect wilderness. Now there stand upon it three wooden cottages, and the great work, the steam mill, is near its completion. The workpeople live near it in tents, so that it is a very animated scene.

The entire country round seems to consist of rich beds of gold quartz. The mode of operation is the same as in other mining countries. Shafts are sunk and galleries made to get at the ore, which is then carried to the mill and crushed to powder. The metal is then separated from the quartz-dust by washing, melted with sulphuric acid, and amalgamated with quicksilver. Sir Henry Huntley was so good as to show me, on a small scale, the whole operation. The quartz yields in this way about thirteen per cent. of gold. Any one can dig who

pleases; but as the setting up a mill is an expensive business, most of the miners sell their stones to Sir H. Huntley.

The next day I went to the great gold washings on the River Yuba. The gold gained here is of two kinds. The gold seekers dig holes in the bed of the river, which become filled with earth and mud; and when in the dry season the water has retired, they shovel them out, and separate the gold particles by washing. The other plan, by which a much larger quantity is obtained, is by damming up the river. For this purpose they make wooden channels, several hundred fathoms long, into which they lead the river: and the part of its bed thus laid dry is then entirely dug up and the earth washed. For all such undertakings as this the people form themselves into companies, and divide the profits at the end of every week; and the business is carried on in such a regular and honourable manner that there never arises the smallest dispute. Every company chooses a director, who is charged with the distribution; and the miners leave their treasures in their tents without lock or bolt, and never miss anything. This was by no means the case at first; but thefts, and even murders, took place often enough, till the gold seekers were compelled to be beforehand with,

the tardy justice of the country, take the matter into their own hands, and hang without further ceremony all the thieves and murderers whom they caught. This method was found effectual.

Those who have no mind to work at mining with their own hands can find others to work for them, as many prefer a certain to an uncertain gain; and the usual wages are seven or eight dollars a day.

Every company and every man may choose any unoccupied spot for his operations; but he must begin to work, at latest, fourteen days after he has taken possession of the ground. Whoever delays longer than this loses the right to it, and any other may take it who likes. If any one can show, with some probability, that on this or that spot gold is to be found, even in places where houses stand, the owner is obliged, on receiving suitable compensation, to part with it to the miners. The same law exists in Chili and Peru.

The work on the river was going on with great activity, and the place had a very lively appearance. Nearly 5000 men were busy on a spot of four or five miles in length; and numerous villages of tents were scattered about. The people cannot build themselves houses, as, when one place is worked out, they have to go to another. The various nations—

Germans, Americans, Chinese, &c. — mostly keep a good deal together, both in their work and in their abodes.

Few among the gold seekers make any very considerable fortunes. They can only work eight months in the year,—till the beginning of the rainy season,—and the labour is very severe, as the people have to stand nearly the whole day in the water, and, while their work lasts, to renounce, not only every recreation, but every comfort of life. Then afterwards, when they go into a town to pass the four months of leisure, they are like sailors ashore with prize-money after a long voyage. Systematically planned temptations surround them on all sides,—the love of pleasure gets the upper hand,—the hardly won treasures melt away, and they soon find themselves as poor as when they began their labours,—and, weakened in body and soul, by the dissipated lives they have been leading, they have to return to the privations and toils of gold digging; and happy are they if one season's experience is sufficient to preserve them from a repetition of the same folly.

The country about both Brown's Valley and the Yuba river is mountainous and woody, and the forest is thick; for at every forty or fifty paces there stands a large tree, mostly an oak; but there is

neither underwood nor creeping plants, and the ground is entirely dust or small stones.

After staying here a few days, I went back to Mary's Ville, where it is much warmer than at San Francisco, though the difference of latitude is very trifling; and I was so unlucky as to have another attack of the obstinate Sumatra fever.

At Mary's Ville I encountered a countryman, from Vienna, a Mr. Royter; and our mutual delight in speaking of our beloved home was so great that the good man gave me a whole day, and accompanied me to every place where there was anything worth seeing.

I was most interested by the natives, who are of pure Indian descent, and have preserved themselves from any mixture of Spanish blood. These savages, as we call them, are diminishing from year to year, under the pressure of the hard, encroaching whites. A few years ago there were sixty Indian families living at Mary's Ville; now there are not more than twenty.\*

These Indians are actually uglier than the Malays. Their growth is short and stunted; they have short,

\* General Sutter informed me that there used to be, only a few years ago, 200 Indians in a large village near his farm. These are now all dead but thirty.

thick necks and clumsy heads; the forehead is low, the nose flat with broad nostrils, the eyes very narrow and showing no intelligence, the cheek-bones prominent, and the mouth large. The teeth are white, but they do not stand in even rows; and their heads are covered by short, thick, rough hair, that looks exactly like a fur cap, especially as it is often partly light and partly dark on the same head. They take no care of it, and apparently do not even smear it with grease. Infants of five or six weeks old even had a shock of this rough hair on their little heads. Their colour is a dirty yellowish-brown; and the women are much inclined to grow fat. Both sexes have the ears pierced with large holes, through which they pass a piece of wood as thick as a man's finger, decorated with paintings or glass beads. They also adorn the rest of their persons with beads, buttons, feathers, and whatever they can get from the whites; and the women are a little tattooed on the chin. The men formerly went quite naked, and the women wore merely an apron about a foot long; but since the whites have been living among them, and that they find old clothes, boots, shirts, &c. lying in the streets, they pick them up, and dress themselves in them, often in a very comic manner.

These people stand on a very low grade of civilisation. They neither till the ground, nor keep cattle, nor hunt—do nothing, in short, but fish; and for their dwellings, they dig in the ground holes of eighteen or twenty feet long, and two feet deep, over which they put a roof, of a tent-like shape, made of wood and clay. The door to these habitations is a small hole, through which you must creep on hands and knees; and a still smaller opening in the roof lets the smoke out. They have neither mats nor earthen vessels, and they understand no work but basket plaiting. In this art, however, they have attained to great perfection: they know how to make their baskets perfectly watertight, and manage even to boil their fish in them. They plait large baskets to keep their dried fish in, smaller to fetch water, and quite little ones that they put on their heads as hats.

It was towards evening when I visited this tribe, and the people were sitting before their holes, by small fires, preparing and eating their evening meal, which consisted of broiled fish and acorn bread. The last named article is very solid, heavy, and damp, and has rather a bitter taste. They make it by pounding the acorns to powder; and with this they make bread without mixing in anything else than water. Be-

sides fish and acorns, they eat pretty nearly everything else that they can get at — frogs, squirrels, grasshoppers, and beetles, which last are considered as dainties.

I saw among these poor creatures many who were ill of fever, some insane, and astonishingly few children. The Indians who live in the neighbourhood of the whites are said to die off much more rapidly than those who have taken refuge in the interior of the forests. The former obtain, in exchange for their fish and other little articles of trade, chiefly spirituous liquors, which is poison to them, constantly making them ill, and frequently killing them outright. Another cause of terrible mortality among them is the small-pox, a disease which they have also received from their white neighbours.

Their poverty in children may probably proceed in a great measure from the custom of the tribe of intermarrying constantly among themselves; most of them are related to each other. In point of morals they are said to be blameless, and no Indian woman in this country will of her own accord form any connection with a white; if she did, she would be expelled by her tribe. When a white man desires to form a connection with an Indian woman, he endeavours to gain over the chief by presents. At



the time of my visit the three chiefs of this tribe formed a very picturesque group. They were sitting at the entrance of their caves, silent, serious, and motionless as usual, dressed in a kind of fantastic half European costume, with plumes of feathers on their heads. It seemed as if they were pondering in their simple unsophisticated understandings the restless doings of the multitudes of white strangers who had come to overrun their country; and they looked as if the emotions excited by the spectacle were not precisely those of astonishment and admiration, but much more akin to contempt. I shall never forget the glance which these three men threw on me and my companions; and when the latter addressed them, they deigned no reply.

Of the value of money they seem to have little idea; and the smallest sum or the largest is with them always *five dollars*. I wanted to buy one of the bits of wood that they stick through their ears, and also one of their water-tight baskets, and for each of these articles they asked "five dollars."

In the evening I took a survey of the places of public recreation of Mary's Ville; and I might almost repeat of them what I said of those of San Francisco, of which they are copies in miniature. I really believe that in the short time the whites have been in

California there has been more vice and crime in it than in the hundreds of years before, when the country was occupied by the natives.

I returned to San Francisco the same way by which I had come, namely by the Sacramento, the banks of which are described by the Americans as enchantingly luxuriant and beautiful. As I had passed them in the night in coming, I could not of course see much of them, and looked forward, therefore, with great expectation to the return journey. The finest day and the most splendid sunshine favoured me, but I tried in vain to discover the much-talked-of beauties of the landscape. The immediate banks were certainly bordered by trees and shrubs; but a few yards inland all vegetation ceased, and the eye lost itself in a sandy, dusty plain. Even the few trees there were—mostly oak, ash, and willow—could not be called fine, for though their trunks were thick and their branches sometimes stretched out far over the water, their foliage was of a dark muddy green.

Only people who lived in such a naked, desolate, treeless region as the country about San Francisco, could possibly make such a talk about such views as these.

## CHAP. III.

CRESCENT CITY. — EXCURSION TO THE ROGUE-RIVER. — INDIANS. — A NIGHT BIVOUAC IN THE WIGWAM. — DANGEROUS SITUATION OF MY TRAVELLING COMPANION. — REVENGEFUL DISPOSITION OF THE INDIANS. — SAN JOSE. — ACAPULCO. — PANAMA.

CRESCENT City, as it is called, a newly established little town, lying northward towards the Oregon and the Rogue-River Indians, formed, as I have said, the object of my second excursion. The distance is three hundred miles, and the price of the passage fifty dollars; but the Americans are liberal with their free passages, and I had often only to mention my name to procure every accommodation of this kind without charge. So it was now with my journey to Crescent City and back.

On the 3rd of November I went on board the steamer Thomas Hunt. We ran pretty near to the coast, which appeared quite uninhabited, and consists of a chain of steep, peaked hills, offering very few suitable anchoring grounds. In some places ap-

peared pine woods, but, on the whole, the barren sandy soil was predominant.

We passed Humboldt's Bay, and on the 5th of November, early in the morning, entered the bay or harbour of Trinidad. It was pretty, but extremely small—I really think not a quarter of a mile across,—and enclosed by rocks fifty or sixty feet high, that leave only an opening just large enough to admit a vessel; and in the middle of the opening a high black rock, partly blocks up even this narrow space. The whole formation might be taken for a burnt-out crater of a volcano. Some dozens of the wooden houses that compose the little town appeared near the summits of the hills, and a fine pine wood closed the miniature picture.

This little town of Trinidad arose only two years ago, and is already going to decay. Trade does not flourish here as had been anticipated; agriculture has not been attempted, and many of the settlers have already gone away again. After passing Trinidad the hills begin to decline, and are covered with pine woods.

We reached Crescent City in the midst of a very heavy rain, and with a stormy sea; and the landing was no easy matter, for the roads are very insecure and open to every wind that blows. From April

to November they offer indeed some protection, as north winds are then prevalent, from which they are slightly sheltered, but during the winter months they are quite exposed.

The situation of the town is very charming. The wooden houses lie partly ranged along the sea-shore, partly scattered about among the trees, and the whole is shaded by lofty pine woods. Towards the south-west lie richly wooded heights and a fine plain, and in the sea groups of small islands and rocks, some naked, others covered with trees.

Crescent City was only founded in the month of February of this year. The forest had to be cut down, and a blockhouse erected, for the Indians are numerous hereabouts; and yet, by the month of August, there were ninety houses finished, several hotels, twenty shops opened, and trade with the neighbouring mining district of Smith's River going on in full activity. Every day I saw many mules going off laden with provisions and other merchandise; and, if it appears ultimately that this is the best and safest route to the interior, the place will be sure to rise rapidly. But the people settled at Trinidad under the idea, that this was the case, and found themselves mistaken. Everything is still

dearer here than at San Francisco, whence all goods are at present brought.

One of the first settlers was a Mr. Grubler, a Swiss by birth, who had the kindness to receive me in his house. He built the blockhouse, and he was also the founder—and is the president—of a very useful and laudable association for the culture and improvement of public speaking. The members assemble one evening in every week at the school-house; political questions are proposed, imaginary law-suits carried on, and novels, poems, &c., criticised, and thus an innocent and instructive evening's amusement afforded.

I was astonished at the good and fluent speeches that I heard delivered, especially as many of the speakers looked like sailors and miners, and had on red flannel shirts and jackets, &c. The fair sex appeared in quite simple domestic-looking dresses of printed cotton. The school-room was not fitted up in a very elegant manner, and let in the cold wind, alas! from all corners, so as almost to extinguish the tallow candles; but still this will doubtless be altered soon, and luxury and splendour replace the old country simplicity; but will the people amuse themselves then better than they do now?

Crescent City lies only four degrees more to the

northward than San Francisco, but there is a far greater difference in the temperature and the weather than one might have imagined. At this time thick clouds covered the sky, it rained often and heavily, and the thermometer fell to near the freezing point.

The chief purpose of my coming had been to visit the Indians, who are still to be found in great numbers in this part of California; but they are retiring further and further into the interior since the settlement of the whites, and to see a large village you have to go at least twelve miles. About half a dozen Indian families were settled in the neighbourhood of the town, and resembled those I had seen at Mary's Ville. They had, too, the same fancy for picking up old clothes that had been thrown away by the whites. One gentleman had mounted a pair of European breeches and a worn-out lady's mantilla, and had on his head a battered lady's bonnet. Another had simply a frock-coat, and *nothing else*, but had adorned the back of it with glass beads according to his own fancy. Another, though his lower man was in the simplest state, had clothed the upper in a waistcoat, and put on his head a round hat, with a hole cut in it to stick some feathers in; and the ladies were no less tastefully attired.

To proceed with safety into the country as far as the Rogue Indians on the Smith's River, it was necessary, I was told, to go in armed company, as these Indians are very savage and cunning. Some of my friends promised to get together a party of eight or ten gentlemen to accompany me; but they did not succeed in finding so many who were willing to undertake it.

Fortunately, a German sailor, named Karl Braun, who had settled here some months before, hearing of my wish, was so kind as to come and offer to accompany me to the Indians. He had had much intercourse with them, had been in the habit of exchanging glass beads, &c., for their fish, understood their language, and, if I liked to venture it, he said he would go with me. I was exceedingly glad of this unexpected offer, accepted it immediately; and, as soon as the rain ceased, we set out.

On the first day, the 7th of November, we went about sixteen miles, mostly along the sea-shore, through deep sand or over stones. Through the forest the paths were good, and, when towards the afternoon we took a turn inland, we soon arrived at Smith's River, the banks of which are entirely of sand; but about half a mile into the country begin some magnificent pine woods. The trees are tall



and slender, and make excellent timber for building. I saw few climbing plants, but there was abundance of underwood and of shrubs; amongst which were blackberry and bilberry bushes; the latter attaining a greater height than in Europe, often as much as four feet.

We passed several villages, but made a very short stay, in order to reach, if possible, a shelter for the night before the rain set in, as it threatened to do soon. They were very small, consisting of not more than seven or eight wigwams or holes, like those of Mary's Ville, except that the wooden framework of the roof was here covered with leaves and branches instead of clay.

We crossed Smith's River in the hollowed trunk of a tree, and the people made use of a quite heavy plank for a rudder.

The further we went from the settlements of the whites the less and less were the people clothed; and at length they appeared in a complete state of nature, excepting only a kind of apology for an apron, worn by the women, sometimes made of elk's skin and sometimes of grass; but the skin was cut up into narrow strips, leaving only a piece of about three inches broad whole at the top. They wind this kind of fringe twice round them, and it looks

like a piece of very ragged fur. I saw it even on the smallest girls, who could scarcely walk. Some of the chiefs had a skin flung like a mantle over their shoulders.

Towards evening we reached a great village, the inhabitants of which call themselves *Huna* Indians. My companion had never been so far before; but he knew one young man among them, with whom he had had dealings for fish and beads, and we determined to pass the night here. It began to rain again, and the cold was so excessive, that I was glad to find a place in one of these earth holes, in the midst of the disgusting naked natives. We lay down round the fire, which blazed up merrily in the middle of the hut, and about which half a dozen Indians were already crouching; but the hut soon became filled to overflowing with curious visitors, and the heat and vapours so suffocating, that I was driven out again in despair, thinking I should prefer the rain and the cold. It was not, however, from rain and cold only that I had to suffer; for the whole population of the village thronged about me, and formed a small close circle, so that I could hardly move. They pulled me this way and that; examined every article of my clothing, from my hat to my shoes; and once even dragged me away with them to some remote

huts in the forest, so that I found some difficulty in getting back to that of my host.

I had some bread and cheese, and my companion had brought with him sugar, coffee, and bread, and also a little tin kettle, in which he made some coffee, as he called it, though there was hardly enough coffee to tinge the water. But the hot drink was, nevertheless, most highly approved of. The kettle was soon emptied and a second edition called for; and when the Indians saw that he put in a little brown powder, they wanted to have some of that, and seized on it to eat it. The sugar they did not put into the coffee, but ate it eagerly alone, as well as the bread, and we had no peace till it was all gone. My guide was not able to save any of his provisions for the following morning.

After this meal was over the Indians set about their own cooking. They brought out some large, fine salmon, with which the waters of California abound; cut off the head and tail, slit up the fish, and stuck in splinters of wood to keep it open; and then put it on a large wooden spit, and roasted it before the fire. Of the heads and tails they made a kind of soup. They filled one of their close baskets with water, and threw in red-hot stones, which they continually replaced with fresh ones, till the water began

to simmer, and then they put in the heads and tails of the fish and let them boil. In a short time the water had thickened and become of a greyish colour, perhaps because a good quantity of ashes had gone in with the hot stones; but the people are not very exact in these matters. The soup they ate with shells; the roasted fish they tore to pieces with their hands, and laid upon flat baskets that serve them for plates. After this they roasted the acorns in the hot ashes, and ate with a long, thin grass root by way of dessert. These last were not only raw but unwashed, with the earth still sticking about them; but they had an extremely delicate taste, and were so soft, that they could be mashed with the tongue. The meal was abundant, and would have been excellent if it had only been flavoured with salt and—cleanliness; but both the one and the other are unknown to these people.

After supper the gentlemen, young and old, made their toilette, by daubing their faces in a most detestable manner with red, blue, or black paint. They first smeared them with fish fat, and then they rubbed in the paint, sometimes passing a finger over it in certain lines, so as to produce a pattern; and it is hardly necessary to say, that their natural ugliness was greatly increased by the pains

they had taken to adorn themselves. When they had concluded this operation they began to sing; and their songs were really more melodious and better sung than I could have expected from such a rude people. The entertainment was prolonged till a late hour in the night, and then they were so polite as to leave the hole to me, in so far that the men went away and only the women remained near me. One of them placed herself so close on one side of me, that I could hardly turn round; and on the other side close to me stood a large basket containing smoked fish; overhead hung another basket of fish to be smoked; and we lay on the bare, cold ground, without pillow or covering, so it may be imagined what a luxurious night I passed.

I had taken very little of the supper, but had a private intention of making myself amends afterwards, by having some bread and cheese when everybody was asleep; but I did not dare produce such dainties as long as the people were about, for everybody would have wanted to taste, and at last there would have been nothing left for me. When the women were all asleep, that is snoring, I raised myself up a little, and very cautiously drew forth my treasure. But my next neighbour either slept very lightly, or had only been pretending to be asleep; for she

sat up instantly and asked me what I was doing, signifying to me that I was to lie down and not move. She then kept stirring the fire until I stretched myself out again and pretended to fall asleep, when she lay down once more at my side. Probably they felt some sort of mistrust of me.

In the morning, as soon as day dawned, all was life and motion again, and there was another grand cooking, and a hearty meal. Whilst the cooking was going on I employed the time by going with the Indian to see him fish. He took with him a pole twenty feet long, to which he attached a spear by a long cord, and as soon as he had thrown the spear he either let the pole fall on the water, or kept it in his hand, according to the size and strength of the fish. When he threw the spear, he never once missed. The cord was made of the entrails of the elk, and resembled a strong harp-string.

*November 8th.* After breakfast we continued our journey, and travelled this day seventeen or eighteen miles, entirely through magnificent woods. When we had proceeded but a short distance we came upon the Oregon territory, and soon met with a tribe of the Rogue-River Indians. We entered several of the wigwams, and my guide tried to get some fish, which he had not hitherto been able to do; and I

crept, as I had done the day before, into many of these earthy habitations, to observe the mode of life and doings of the people.

The Indians of the North of California stand at the very lowest point of culture, and are said to have no idea of religion or of a future state; but in many of their villages you find a sort of conjuror or "medicine man," who undertakes by his potent art to cure diseases, discover thefts, and point out the places where stolen goods lie concealed.

These Indians do not scalp their enemies or take them prisoners, but they kill all the men who fall into their power, though never the women. If a woman or a child comes within range of their arrows, they call to them to get out of the way. They fight with men, they say, and not with the weak and helpless; an example that may make us feel ashamed when we remember in how many of the wars of whites women and children have been tortured and murdered.

The people here were larger and stronger than those in South California, but not handsomer; and among the women, who were tattooed on the hands and arms as well as the chin, there were some extremely clumsy figures. Men and women both wear their hair in a long roll, and, since they are un-

acquainted with combs, they make their fingers answer the purpose; they then stroke it smooth, and twist it up round the head with a bit of the skin of some animal, or some other rag. The girls cut their hair short in the front. Both sexes follow the widely prevailing fashion of sticking a round piece of wood or brass through the cartilage of the ear; the men and boys wear ornaments of beads at the gristle of the nose; and both ladies and gentlemen put on as much finery in the way of glass beads and feathers as they can get. Their only weapons are bows and arrows, and also, since the settlement of the whites among them, knives. The elk they usually take in snares.

They are extremely filthy, almost too much so to describe. I have seen them, for instance, searching in each other's heads for vermin, and presenting all the specimens they found conscientiously to the owner, who actually devoured them!

The men go in the morning into the river, but, like the Malays, bring all the dirt out on their skins that they took in. I did not, nevertheless, see so many cutaneous diseases among them as among the Malays or Dyaks, and I am inclined to think this is to be attributed to a very peculiar kind of bath that they take. They make a hole in the earth, something like their habitations, but still smaller, and in this



they make a very large fire, and remain crouched in it till they are literally bathed in perspiration.

Among these tribes there were wonderfully few children, though the people mostly looked strong and healthy. The babies they had were put into longish narrow baskets with covers, and bound upon the backs of the mothers, who perform all their customary work with this burden, and, as usual among rude nations, the greatest part of the work falls on the women; but it is not very severe, being principally weaving of the baskets and gathering acorns. This last occupation, however, is often very fatiguing, as they have a long way to walk and a considerable burden to carry. The men, if they go with them at all, will only carry a very small portion.

In many of the villages I found the men playing at a game. They sat in a circle round the fire, holding in their hands little thin sticks, of which most were white, but some black. Every one threw them so as to make the black ones fly far out of the circle; then he took hold of them again, passed them behind his back from the left to the right hand, and began to throw again. There were many lookers on, and some musicians, whose instruments consisted of lobster-claws fastened upon sticks, where-with they thumped upon a board. Another game is a kind of guessing one, played with small clay balls

and for money ; shell-money that is to say, the only currency they are acquainted with, and which has a certain value among them ; for, besides other articles, they can buy wives with it !

These games, to which they are passionately addicted, are generally played in the hall of the chief ; and while the play lasts the women are banished. It was the men being entirely occupied with these gambling amusements that prevented our getting any fish.

We passed the night in a village, and I slept as before in a wigwam with several women ; but my poor companion had, during this night, a narrow escape from being murdered. Some vague feeling of suspicion had, as he told me the next morning, occasioned him to be more cautious than usual. He did not trust the people, and had begged to be allowed a hut to himself. This was given him ; but the feeling of insecurity made him sleep very lightly, and that saved him ; for, in the middle of the night he heard a rustling among the boughs with which he had closed the entrance, and soon saw an Indian come crawling in on hands and knees. His enemy was just in the act of raising himself up, and with a drawn knife in his hand, when the sailor sprang upon him and presented

a pistol at his head. Thereupon the Indian drew back, pretending he had only come to see whether there was wood enough to keep the fire up.

These Indians are represented as treacherous, cowardly, and revengeful, and only attacking the whites when they find one alone. But, after all, what other means of attack have they against the well-armed whites—the domineering race from which they have had so much to suffer. Revenge is really natural to man; and if the whites had suffered as many wrongs from them as they from the whites, I rather think they too would have felt the desire of revenge.

In the country I passed through yesterday, I saw several burnt and devastated wigwams whence the people had been driven out by force because they would not willingly give up their native soil to the stranger; and besides taking their land, the whites seduce their wives and daughters, and, when they cannot succeed in this, sometimes seize them by open violence. A case of this kind occurred while I was in Crescent City. Three miles from the town some Americans had settled as farmers; and one day, when a native was passing by their door with his wife, on his way to the town, these ruffians sprang out of their dwelling,

snatched the woman from the side of her husband, dragged her into the house, and locked the door. The poor Indian screamed, and yelled, and struck the door, demanding his wife; but, instead of giving up their prey, these civilised men rushed out again, beat the Indian furiously, and drove him away.

The poor fellow came, all bruised, to the town, and made his complaint; and what was his redress? The villains were recommended to make it up with the Indian, and give him some glass beads and similar trumpery by way of compensation!

Outrages of this kind are naturally made known from tribe to tribe; and then it certainly does happen that, when solitary whites come among them, and for the moment the superiority of force is on their side, they seek to retaliate, and, in so doing, make the innocent suffer for the guilty.

Many impartial persons have assured me that wherever the natives have been treated in a kind and friendly manner they have been found harmless.

*November 9th.* In the morning we left the dangerous village, and began our return journey; for my companion would not venture further. We returned by a different route, and in the afternoon came to a small settlement of about a dozen whites. Here also the first thing I saw was the remains of a wigwam that had been burned to ashes. These

farmers, it seems, lived in a state of constant strife with the Indians, on account of their women; and they naturally revenged themselves when they could, and had at last killed one of the white men, whereupon the rest set fire to the village, and drove away its inhabitants. Since that time the settlers can never venture to go about their work without a loaded gun; and so much the more as three men have lately been missed from a neighbouring white settlement. Two of the bodies were shortly afterwards found in the forest, buried under branches and leaves; the third a long way off, in a river whence the farmers used to fetch water. They told me that when they came suddenly upon the half-decayed body, the disgust of the sight made them all ill. The fourth victim had not yet been found.

We stopped for the night at this settlement, though there were only two small huts, almost like log-houses; but the settlers were already building better ones. These farmers lived extremely well. They had the finest wild geese, which they had shot themselves, magnificent fish, that they got for the merest trifle from the Indians; potatoes, bread, tea, coffee—in short it was quite a banquet; and we had another the next morning no less splendid.

The weather was now getting extremely cold: in the night the temperature fell below the freezing point; and in the morning everything was covered with hoar frost. Snow seldom falls here, and when it does, melts before it touches the ground. The farmers assured me that there was every appearance of the soil being abundantly fertile; but they had been settled too short a time, and had cultivated too small a spot of ground to make their opinion very important. In the neighbourhood of Crescent City, however, I saw, even at this advanced time of year, all kinds of vegetables, and amongst them as fine specimens as in the Grand Exhibition at San Francisco.

The whole of California — but more particularly the northern part — would be found, I think, very advantageous to European settlers. The climate is healthy, the soil productive, even where it looks dry and sandy, — as the luxuriant forests sufficiently testify. It is virgin soil, and for a long while will require neither irrigation nor manure. By the time it does the settlers may be well provided with cattle to furnish it.

Near to the Oregon territory the land is sold by government at a dollar an acre. Within the limits of Oregon it is given away, as it is greatly desired to have that country settled; and every inducement is

offered to immigrants. Would that people came with a view to agriculture, rather than to gold seeking! With a little sagacity and perseverance, farmers may, in a short time, attain to a prosperous condition, and be able to lead a pleasant, domestic life for the rest of their days. Of the gold seekers a very small proportion indeed return home in possession of much of the wealth so suddenly won; and the proverb of "lightly come, lightly go," is strictly applicable to their fortunes.

On the 10th of November, the fourth day of my excursion, I found myself once more in Crescent City, and bringing with me a very painful impression of the lot of the poor driven-out Indians. The Government of the United States has indeed given itself some trouble about them; and though their chief care has always been to get them removed to as great a distance as possible, they have offered them some compensation for the land they have been deprived of, have urged the white settlers to treat them well, and every year send an envoy to their new abode, to take presents to them, and see at least that they do not die of hunger. The great fault of the government is over indulgence towards the white settlers, mostly men almost as rude as the savages themselves, and far less well disposed, who shame-

fully abuse the indulgence. As long as there are so few courts of justice in the country that it is very difficult for a native to find his way to one, and until these courts show some more just severity to the misconduct of the settlers, the poor Indian will remain the sport of the insolent white. The country round Crescent City is not only very fertile, but very romantic. The beautiful mountain chain Siskoyon, which rises to the east of Mary's Ville, stretches as far as here, and, dividing into several branches, forms fruitful valleys and plains. The higher peaks were at this season covered with snow, — the first snow that I had seen since I left my own country.

The steamer that runs from Crescent City to San Francisco had been ready to start on the very evening of my return; but the weather, which had been very stormy all day, became worse towards evening, and she did not go. Even the next day (November 11th) it was no easy matter to get on board. Storms and mists accompanied us, too, on our whole voyage, so that we did not run into Trinidad; but, by way of compensation, we saw a beautiful rainbow.

For my third excursion to St. José I was indebted to the polite invitation of the Austrian consul, M.



Vischer: a great attention on his part; for in this country time is estimated at a very high value, and the smallest recreation of this kind becomes extremely expensive.

It was to be a land journey; and as the country was described to us as enchantingly beautiful, we placed ourselves outside an omnibus, in order to enjoy it to the utmost.

The plain in which St. José lies extends for 120 miles, from San Francisco on one side to Monterey on the other. It is about fifteen miles broad, and on account of its great fertility is already named the granary of California.

The first part of the journey — about a third — I cannot call beautiful at all; the country is monotonous, and without vegetation, except some crippled-looking trees, whose leafy crowns have been blown all on one side by the constant and violent north-easterly gales that make the climate of San Francisco so disagreeable. The ground is little cultivated, and consists mostly of meagre pastures, on which the poor animals can only in the spring find sufficient nourishment. It is said, nevertheless, to be excellent land, and only to require cultivation.

Three miles from San Francisco lies the mission-

ary station Dolores, to which I had been before introduced by Mrs. Morton.

The people residing at the place are called Spaniards; a name given to all natives of the country who are neither negroes nor Indians. Their houses, as well as the convent and the church, are built of baked brick; but they have such low doors and windows, and are altogether so deplorable-looking, that I should rather have taken them for dilapidated barns than dwelling-houses. The church contains a fine altar-piece that I am inclined to ascribe to an old Spanish master.

In the territory of San Mateo, twenty-two miles from San Francisco, the country begins to be prettier. The Diabolo mountain, 3600 feet high, rises boldly above its neighbours; and tall trees of large growth — mostly oaks — lie scattered in park-like groups; and country seats, inns, and farms, interspersed, give animation to the prospect. The ground is chiefly sand and dust, in which the horse's feet often sink a foot deep; but still I can imagine that in the rainy season, in the spring, when the fields are green, the flowers in blossom, and the trees covered with fresh foliage, the country must be very pretty and pleasant, and may easily, to

townspeople little accustomed to the beauties of nature, appear "enchanting."

St. Clara, through which our road lay, is a pleasant little place, with a handsome church and a Jesuits' college for boys. The word *San*, prefixed to the names of so many towns and villages, reminds you that the country once belonged to Catholic Spain; and in most of the larger ones you find handsome churches and school buildings.

An avenue of trees, four miles long, which was planted by the monks, leads from St. José to St. Clara,—rather more of a town than the former, and possessing some hundreds of houses, mostly inhabited by recently-arrived settlers.

Our destination, a great farm belonging to M. Vischer, lay four miles further. This farm is of 750 acres, and in Europe would pass for a very large one; but here it is only not small. There are still some land-owners holding from the time of the Mexican government, when the land had scarcely any value, whose possessions are five or six miles in breadth, and from twenty to thirty in length, and the value of which is increasing every day. Persons whose estates before the gold discoveries were not worth 50,000 dollars, must now be counted among mil-

lionaires. The great expense attendant on landed property is for enclosure. Every owner of land has to enclose it, for two reasons: first, because all horned cattle, as well as horses, mules, pigs, and sheep, may be driven to pasture on open ground; and secondly, that newly arrived immigrants settle on unenclosed land, without any leave asked; and, according to American custom, the proprietor has, in such a case, no right to drive them out. Even if he afterwards has the ground enclosed, the ejection is attended with great difficulty, and involves expensive lawsuits, and sometimes requires actual violence. Regular battles, with shooting on both sides, have frequently taken place on such occasions; and altogether the outrageous ways of these American settlers are almost incredible. Many will actually carry their notions of liberty so far as to take possession of houses that they find standing empty.

The enclosures — fences as they are called — cost much hard cash in a country where labour is so dear. M. Vischer, for instance, required for the fences on his land 30,000 stakes eight feet high. These cost in the forest fifty dollars a thousand; the taking them to the spot and sharpening them, thirty more; and the putting them in their places,

twenty; so that the whole cost was 3000 dollars, or above 600*l*.

Twelve miles from St. José lies a very large and rich quicksilver mine, to which we were to pay a visit, and the carriage was even at the door; but a continued and violent rain would have made it in too literal a sense a "water party," and I was obliged to content myself with the description given by M. Vischer.

You enter the pit, I was told, on the side of a mountain 1500 feet high; and 800 feet lower down you again come to the light of day.

The cinnabar ore contains from thirty-five to forty-five per cent of the metal; the mine is so rich, that it might supply the whole world; and since it has been worked the price of quicksilver has fallen in Peru from eighty to fifty dollars. It belongs to a company in Mexico, whose floating capital is estimated at a million of dollars.

The weather did not clear up the next day; so there was nothing for it but to renounce the chief object of the excursion, and in a well-closed omnibus drive back to the town.

. A few days before I left San Francisco, the newspapers brought some strange intelligence from Lower California, a country still belonging to Mexico.

Some fifty Americans had, it seems, left San Francisco in a shallop, and landing at Filipe, in the district of Sonora, set up their standard, and formally taken possession. The peaceful inhabitants of this little place, not in the least expecting such a piratical attack, had not even arms, and could make but a feeble defence, especially as the pirates professed to be only the advanced guard of a much more considerable force. The fifty Americans remained therefore in triumphant possession, and at once declared a strip of land with a population of 10,000 souls, an independent State.

The inducement to this illegal expedition was, of course, the thirst of gold, excited by a report that gold and silver were to be found there in large quantities.

And what was said at San Francisco to this robber expedition? Some openly took the part of the robbers; others thought that at all events their exploit was a stroke of genius. The day before my departure—the 15th of December—a new band, 256 in number, went off to Sonora to help their predecessors; and there was no attempt to stop them on the part of the American Government. This second expedition, however, was not quite so successful. The Mexican Government sent troops

against them, with orders to shoot them down like banditti wherever they made their appearance; and ultimately most of these buccaneers perished.

The company, whose steamers go from San Francisco to Panama, immediately on the simple request of one of their officers, Mr. Mather, gave me a free passage; and on the 10th of December I went on board one of these magnificent vessels, the "Golden Gate" (Captain Johans), in company with the Morton family, who had become very dear to me. At four o'clock we weighed anchor, and departed. I think I have never in my life seen a finer vessel. She was of 800-horse power, and 2,500 tons' burden, and could take 800 or, in case of need, 1000 passengers. Her rate was twelve miles an hour; and she used fifty tons of coals a day. Her length was 300 feet, her greatest breadth 75 feet, and the saloon 130 feet long. She had four stories, two of which were above the water; and broad galleries ran round the sides, on which large convenient doors and windows opened. The table kept for the first and second classes of passengers was luxurious to prodigality; all the dishes were prepared in the most costly manner, and fresh bread baked twice a day; the third class also was proportionably well provided for. The captain and his officers were worthy of so

fine a vessel, and no less distinguished for their attentive and courteous behaviour, for which they received the acknowledgments of the passengers, in a public address, on our arrival at Panama. We sailed past the islands of San Caterina, St. Clemens, St. Barbara, and St. Anacopa. On the last, only a fortnight ago, a splendid vessel called the "Winfield Scott," was wrecked. The night was excessively dark and foggy; and the captain was so very incautious as, in such weather, to pass between the islands and the continent, instead of outside the islands. Happily no lives were lost; but the vessel sank so rapidly, that no luggage whatever—nothing but the gold and half the mail bags were saved. We, too, passed through the narrow strait, but lighted by the friendly moon, and with the ocean as profoundly calm as if it were asleep, and at most only dreaming of the mischief it had done.

*December 18th.* This morning we stopped for half an hour at St. Diego to land a few passengers; but the vessel lay so far from the coast, that I could see very little of the new American town, and of the older one of the Mexicans, four miles off, nothing at all.

Near St. Diego rises one of the high mountain chains whose summits attain the region of perpetual



snow; but the whole coast, of which we had not yet lost sight, as well as the mountains, are covered with vegetation and forest.

*December 19th.* We kept far off the mainland, but near the islands of *Cerroo* and the little *Bonitos*; the first about twenty-six miles long, and looking beautiful and fertile, though uninhabited, as it is said to be deficient in water; *Bonitos* a mere craggy rock without tree or bush, and covered with scanty vegetation.

*December 20th.* Mostly out at sea, but steering for Cape Lazara, and afterwards entering Magdalen Bay.

*December 21st, 22nd.* Still at sea. For some days past the bleak weather of California had begun to give way to a warmer temperature. With every turn of the paddle wheels, one seemed to feel the approach to the tropics; and one warm piece of clothing after another was thrown aside. In the evenings the deck formed a most pleasant rendezvous. People promenaded up and down, or formed groups for conversation; children ran and romped about; and the whole scene was richly illuminated by a brilliant moon and thousands of stars. Truly a voyage in one of these "water-palaces" is a thing to be remembered with pleasure.

The company consisted almost wholly of Americans; and again I had occasion to notice the respectful courtesy of the gentlemen towards our sex,—far greater than I have ever seen in any other country. The commonest American boy of ten years old is in this respect equal to the most refined European gentleman. In other points, too, the demeanour of the passengers was perfectly decorous; no one chewed tobacco, or spat, or came into the saloon with a cigar, or did anything that could cause the slightest annoyance; and this was the more surprising, as there is nowhere more mixed company than on the voyages to and from California. At dinner there was the best opportunity for noticing this mixture; for the lucky miner, artisan, or pedlar sat next the great merchant and capitalist; and when at dessert they leaned their elbows on the table, you saw many hands that had obviously been only accustomed to handle the spade and the shovel. I must own I found much more pleasure in this simple and natural, but well-behaved company, than in the stately formality of, for instance, one of the great English steamers to India, where the women dressed every day as if they were going to a ball, as indeed they did also in the little American steamers that went from San Francisco to Sacramento and Mary's Ville. Here the ladies were

well, but simply attired. An American does not take it to heart either if you sit, walk, or stand otherwise than he does, and thinks, that whether you put your knife or your fork in your mouth is a matter that concerns you and not him. He is not liable to the besetting weakness of so many of the English, of considering every one rude and vulgar who does anything differently from themselves.

On the 23rd of December we ran into the Bay of Acapulco. The mountains around are not high, and not so richly clothed as in the Indian Archipelago, but glorious in comparison with the naked sand-hills of California, and you see high feathered cocoa palms, vast mangos, and many beautiful trees and shrubs, skirting the sea-shore, and climbing up the hills.

*December 23rd.* I here set foot for the first, and probably also for the last time, on Mexican soil.

The small town of Acapulco lies on hilly ground, in a corner of the bay, so hidden, that it is hardly to be seen at all; and the fort is enthroned on a majestic promontory, that throws itself out far into the sea. The town contains only 1500 inhabitants, and has a very poor appearance; the houses are of unburnt brick, wood, or clay, only one story high, and with windows strongly barred. The interior is

pleasanter than one might expect, as the rooms are lofty and airy, and furnished towards the court with verandahs, where the people take their meals, and pass the greater part of the day.

Near the square, which serves as a market-place, and which is disfigured by many little booths, is a handsome Catholic church, built of unburnt brick; a rather favourite material seemingly with the Spaniards, as all their buildings in California are constructed with it.

The whole place has a ruinous look, for in the last year, on the 4th of December, an earthquake took place by which most of the buildings were more or less damaged, and some of them thrown quite down. Fortunately it happened at nine o'clock in the evening, when everybody was up and ready for immediate flight. Even the fortress, which I ascended in order to get a good view over the bay and the adjacent country, had suffered considerably, and its stone walls and ramparts had in many places fallen in.

Acapulco is celebrated for the pearls which are found on some islands lying twenty or thirty miles off. The fishery is carried on in a very simple manner, by men who dive seventy or eighty feet deep into the sea, taking with them knives to loosen the pearl-oysters from the rock, and baskets to put them

in, and after remaining below one or two minutes, they come to the surface again, with or without booty. The chief danger of the pearl-fishers is from sharks, which swarm round the coast, but which the fishers are very dexterous in escaping from. They always take with them a long rounded piece of wood, which, when they cannot get away by swimming or diving, they stick into the open jaws of the monster as he comes towards them; and they have then plenty of time to escape before he can recover from this peculiar kind of locked-jaw.

The pearls are found, not in the shell, as is often asserted, but in the animal itself; the shell contains only mother of pearl. In many shells there is a kind of excrescence like pearl, but not really such; it proceeds from some other animal, and resembles the excrescences on leaves and plants. Although every one of these oysters contains the material of pearl, and sometimes as much as eight or nine, a fisherman may bring up many before he is lucky enough to get a really fine one; and the more there are in an oyster the more certain it is that none of them are of much value.

It is supposed that the pearl is produced by disease in the animal; and, though the people here often eat

the pearl-oyster, they will not eat those that contain many pearls, as they consider them unwholesome. The pearls from the coasts of Mexico and New Granada are considered of very fine water, and even on the spot bear a high price.

I saw in Acapulco some pretty little manufactures of flowers from small shells; and some extremely well modelled wax figures, representing the costumes and employments of the people of Mexico, which I believe come from the city.

The inhabitants of Acapulco are of very mixed origin, proceeding from the ancient race mingled with the Negro and Spanish, by which the country was conquered three hundred years ago; and according to the predominance of the blood of one or the other people is the variation of feature and colour, through every shade of black, brown, and white.

After a stay of only six hours on shore we went on board again, where we were much amused by the performances of the juvenile pearl-fishers, who were swimming round the ship, and calling on the passengers to throw money into the sea, that they might display their skill in finding it. In this way they familiarise themselves with the element, and qualify themselves for their future vocation as pearl-fishers.

On leaving Acapulco we went a good way out to

sea, and did not see land again till just before we got to Panama.

Christmas eve we passed very quietly, like any other; and Christmas day was distinguished at dinner by many hurrahs and the drinking of much champagne and other wines.

*December 28th.* To-day land appeared again; at first like high mountains, which, as we approached, seemed to sink into plains. Vegetation was not very luxuriant, and some places the country even looked barren. By nine o'clock in the evening we were lying before Panama, having performed the voyage of 3300 miles from San Francisco in eleven days and nineteen hours; not including, of course, those in which we had stopped.

As early as four on the following morning our water palace was all alive and in motion. Everybody was in a hurry to go ashore, in order to secure the best mules for the journey across the Isthmus. I went ashore as early as I could too, though I was not going across, for land is land; and after all one prefers *terra firma* to the best of ships. I was so fortunate as to meet with a very cordial reception from Dr. Antonrieth; but my first walk was to the spot where I found the whole ship's company assembled, preparing for the journey. It was quite a

gay scene; all were bustling about, and the square was full of men, mules, horses, porters, and luggage. The more opulent rode, the little children were carried, the luggage was packed on mules, and the poor followed on foot.

The breadth of the Isthmus at this part is rather more than 100 miles, of which 23 are done on horse-back, or mule-back, about 40 by water, and the remainder on the new railroad. This short journey, like everything else in this country, is very dear, from the great number of passengers constantly arriving. Landing from the steamer for instance, a distance of three miles, costs two dollars a head, with half a dollar more for being lifted ashore, when it is ebb-tide and the boats can not get quite up, and the same sum again for landing a trunk. If you want to be taken on board a ship the case is still worse, and twice or thrice those sums are often demanded. It is a great oversight on the part of the company to which the steamers belong that they have not taken measures to deliver travellers from this extortion.

The hire of a mule for the twenty-three miles was this time eighteen dollars; had there been more passengers the charge would have been still higher. A place in the boat costs five, on the railroad eight dollars; the luggage twenty cents a pound; so that



altogether this little journey comes to not less than forty dollars, without board or lodging.

Panama is the chief town and largest harbour of the district of the same name in the republic of New Granada, which contains more than two millions of inhabitants, and has its capital, Bogota, in the interior. The country round is very beautiful; rocks and islands, amongst which are Taboga and Taboquilla, rise out of the water, and a chain of hills, of not more than 500 feet high, runs down to the sea-shore. The great mountain chain of Mexico and New Granada, which is seen at a distance, has here sunk considerably.

The town with the suburbs, and the immediate environs, contains nearly 10,000 persons. It has important fortifications, furnished on the sea side with half a dozen guns and some mortars. It has three squares, the largest of which is spacious and very clean; a cathedral with a handsome façade; and a most agreeable impression was made on me, coming from San Francisco, by not seeing old clothes, shirts, hats and shoes, dead dogs, cats, and rats, &c., lying about the streets. At San Francisco you stumble upon them at every step. I was also delighted with being able to breathe and move about freely in the houses, and could well dispense

with carpets and fine furniture, in consideration of space and air.

Of churches and chapels there is no lack, for this small town has more than a dozen in use, besides many others lying in ruins. If religion and virtue went on increasing in the same ratio as churches and priests, the people of Panama would certainly be exemplary; but unluckily it sometimes seems as if one must calculate them rather in the inverse proportion.

The cathedral is the largest, but what is called the negro church is the most decorated. A great deal of silver is employed in ornamenting it, but in a very tasteless manner, so that no good effect is produced; and the statues of saints are frightfully carved and painted, and dressed up in silk velvet and lace, with real human hair on their heads, so that they are enough to frighten you.

On Sunday, at high mass, there was plenty of music and singing; but such dreadful ear-splitting music, that I really think a Malay concert would have been preferable. I began to think I had been quite unjust to the musical performances of that people. Some of the melodies, too, were of so frisky a character, that I could hardly fancy I was in a church and not in a theatre.

Would that these people had simpler churches, and fewer but better priests!

As in my travels in Chili and Brazil, I have before had occasion to remark, the priests stand at so low a point of culture and character, that they should rather be employed in anything than in Divine service and popular instruction; and neither here nor there are they held in the smallest respect by the people. In other countries, where the priests really fulfil their duties in a manner worthy of their office, as at Batavia and Padang for instance, I found them in the enjoyment of the highest esteem of all classes. But in the Spanish and Portuguese American countries there are few priests at all worthy of the name, and the popular education and morality are at a low ebb indeed.

Among the ruins the finest are those of the former college and church of St. Domingo; both of which would offer splendid subjects for a painter. They are not so entirely destroyed but that many fine portions of the buildings, majestic cupolas, moulded ceilings, porticos, &c., are still to be distinguished; and the most beautiful climbing plants have twined themselves round the fragments of the walls, and blossoms and flowers cover the pavement and peep out of dilapidated doors and windows. The ruins of

the church of St. Domingo are distinguished by an arch of peculiar construction, which attracts the attention of all connoisseurs, being so slightly curved, that it scarcely rises three feet in a span of thirty.

The population of Panama is of the same mixed race — Indian, old Spanish, and Negro — as the inhabitants of Acapulco; but among these mongrels are some very handsome people, with remarkably fine eyes, hair, and teeth. Their hands and feet are also admired for their smallness; but, as among the Malays, the rounded form is wanting, the fingers are too long, and you see the bones too much.

Since there has been so great a concourse of passengers across the Isthmus these people need want for nothing, if they were only ever so little industrious; but many of them much prefer poverty and filth to work. They live chiefly on rice and fruit, though they like beef and pork when they can get it without earning it. A great deal of dried beef is brought from Buenos Ayres in long narrow strips, and sold by the ell.

The costume of these people is European; the men wear breeches and jackets; the women long dresses, wherewith they sweep the streets. They are cut very low on the bust, and trimmed with lace so broad, that it falls far below the waist. If

this costume were only clean and neatly put on, it would be very elegant; but it generally hangs on so loosely that, while on one shoulder it drops off so as to leave shoulder and bosom bare, on the other it is hoisted up to the neck. With the broad flounces they wipe the dust from their faces; or they use them for dusters, or even for pocket-handkerchiefs. Both sexes wear little round straw hats, which they know how to plait; but these do not look well on the women, as they are too small, and scarcely serve to cover the thick plaits of their hair.

Women and girls are very fond of decking their hair with flowers; natural when they have them, if not, artificial. They, as well as the men, are passionate smokers of cigars. You see children of ten years old with these things in their mouths; and the men have a knack, when they are doing anything, of putting the burning part into their mouths, by which they keep the cigar alight longer. The favourite diversion of the people is cock-fighting; but they are not very much addicted to it, and I saw none of those spectacles while I was there.

Of the public institutions of Panama I visited only the hospitals, of which there are two: one for the natives, supported by the government; the other for strangers, founded by the Europeans. The for-

mer is beneath notice; it consists of nothing more than a long passage open at one side, in which patients suffering from contagious diseases are placed along with others but very slightly ill, and dirt and destitution are its chief characteristics. It is more like a prison than a place for the cure of disease, and the very sight of it is enough to kill any sick person who had not grown up in the midst of poverty and misery. I saw about a dozen poor creatures here,—some with bad eyes, others suffering from cutaneous diseases and disgusting tumours,—crawling about on the unboarded ground with their bandages in a most filthy state.

The Strangers' Hospital is a very different thing; it is, indeed, only a dismantled ship fitted up for the purpose; but everything is clean and well-arranged, and the greatest care is taken of patients.

Among the short excursions round Panama I found a walk to the mountain Aneon best worth the trouble. You can get to its summit with perfect convenience in an hour and a half; and, when there, you find a prospect that you might sit and gaze at for hours without tiring. You look over the whole town, a part of which juts out far into the sea. Behind this extends a large, richly luxuriant valley, watered by a river; but still, alas! mostly covered

by forest. On one side lies the wide ocean, with its numerous islands and islets; and on the other rise ranges of hills and mountains, and enclose the beautiful picture like its frame. I never obtained such an enjoyment as this prospect afforded in all California, although I have traversed it in many directions. Unfortunately, Panama is not healthy; the climate is very hot, and strangers are continually attacked by the malignant fever of the country, which, in many instances, proves fatal. The cause of this unhealthiness is said to be in the uncultivated state of the land; and that beautiful and richly luxuriant valley is principally a morass.

## CHAP. IV.

JOURNEY TO LIMA.—THE ENGLISH STEAMER.—GUAYAQUIL.  
—KALLAO.—GERMAN EMIGRANTS.—LIMA.—CHURCHES  
AND PUBLIC BUILDINGS.—PERUVIAN LADIES.—EARTH-  
QUAKE.—INSECURITY.—THE WATERING-PLACE.—CHO-  
RILLOS.—THE RUIN OF THE TEMPLE OF THE SUN.—  
POCHACAMAC.—THE HACIENDA OF ST. PEDRO.

I KEPT the new year at Panama with my friend Dr. Antonrieth, and then left for Lima in the steamer "Bolivia." An English company has hitherto enjoyed the monopoly of the line from Panama to Valparaiso, undisturbed by any competition from the Americans; and, as a not uncommon consequence of this freedom from competition, we find high prices and very indifferent accommodation for travellers. These steamers certainly do not show any signs of the philanthropic tendencies of which in England we hear so much; and, although the captain was very polite and attentive, and the food good, I cannot deny that I should be very glad to see some rival American steamer started.



I will mention a few of the arrangements of the vessel. The sleeping-cabins for first-class passengers are so confined, especially those of the ladies, that they cannot possibly dress or undress otherwise than one after the other. When these are full, passengers who come later must sleep in the dining-room; and, should that also be filled, as it may be, since as many passengers as can be crammed in are taken, the late arrivals must go into the fore-cabin, which is clean and handsome indeed, but without any other partitions than a small curtain before each berth. Both sexes are put into it; though the English in their own country are so fastidious as not to permit a gentleman to enter the ladies' waiting-room. But where profit is in question other considerations, I am afraid, are apt to give way.

The place for second-class passengers is a mere hole, to which you descend by a ladder. There are neither beds nor bolsters, and the passengers can merely stretch themselves on the hard dirty ground. The whole furniture is a long table and a long bench, and the food consists of the remains of what is furnished to the first cabin. As for tablecloths, glasses, and so forth, they are regarded as quite needless luxuries, and the stewards and servants are in this cabin associated with the passengers. The

place for the third-class is the open deck, without so much as an awning to protect travellers from the rain or the tropical sun. This treatment of their passengers certainly does not show any very liberal character in the company. What a contrast it presents to that of the "Golden Gate," where even the steerage passengers had a roomy cabin, a good bed, and excellent food, without having any more to pay than on the English vessel.

On the 10th of January we crossed the equator without suffering in the least from the heat; and Captain Strahan, who had been several years making the passages between Panama and Valparaiso, assured me he had always found the temperature moderate along this coast. The sky is very commonly covered with clouds, by which the heat of the sun is much diminished.

On the 11th we entered the Gulf of Guayaquil, and saw the coast of the republic of Ecuador. In the foreground lay a smooth hill, from the top of which the land stretched away to a boundless extent. Afterwards we passed a rock which, from the peculiarity of its shape, has been called the "Dead Man." Early the next morning we got to Guayaquil, which lies fifty miles up the fine River Guaya. The town contains 12,000 inhabitants, and is the first harbour

and the second city in the country. The capital, Quito, lies on the other side of the Chimborazo, at a height of 10,000 feet. The situation of Guayaquil is very pretty, as the river here widens to the extent of half a mile, and the environs are very fertile. The background of the landscape is formed by finely wooded hills, and in the distance rises the mighty Cordilleras; amongst which, in clear weather, can be seen the lofty Chimborazo, 21,000 feet high.

The manner in which the houses are built is well adapted to the climate. They have but one story, and are provided towards the street with broad balconies resting on pillars or arches, under which you walk, so that you are sheltered from the heat of the sun. There are also broad galleries or balconies on the inner side of the house, towards the court, and the rooms are as lofty and spacious as they ought to be where the heat is so great.

My first walk, when I come into a town new to me, is to the bazaars and markets, for there you can always get some idea of the people and of the productions; and accordingly I made use of the brief period of our stay here to visit these places. I was quite surprised by the variety and abundance of provisions; there were whole boatsfull of pine apples and other fruit, corn of all kinds, rice, maize, vege-

tables, meats, fish, poultry, eggs, chocolate, &c., and everything incomparably cheaper than at Panama. Yet, notwithstanding this cheapness, there is no such thing as copper money; and the smallest silver coin—a *quarto medio*—is worth two cents and a half. Even this is so seldom seen, that you might suppose it an imaginary coin.

Towards the evening of the 13th we got to Payta; a wretched-looking place, with most melancholy environs, belonging to Peru. As far as the eye can reach neither tree, bush, nor even a blade of grass is to be seen. There are a few dozen flat-roofed houses, covered with reeds and clay; but you can hardly distinguish them from the sandy, dusty, and hilly ground on which they stand. We stopped here about the same time as at Guayaquil, and Captain Strahan was kind enough everywhere to take me ashore with him. I could find nothing better to do here, however, than to climb one of the small hills, about thirty-or forty feet high, to try if there were anything more to be seen beyond; but it was all the same. More and more hills, and nothing else, formed the continuation of this most dreary-looking wilderness. You have to go twenty-one miles up a river before you can see any sort of vegetation; there is not a drop of water to drink that is not fetched from fourteen miles off; and linen has to be sent the same

distance to be washed. What can induce people to live in such a place?

*January 14th and 15th.* More land seen; sometimes flat, sometimes hilly or even mountainous, but always of the same mournful and desolate aspect.

Casma is a landing-place on the coast, with a few miserable huts roofed with leaves to afford shelter to passengers waiting for the steamers. The town lies six miles inland; and here begin the higher mountains, but they are still as barren and dreary as ever; but we stopped only an hour to take in fruit and passengers.

The nearer we came to Lima the more our deck resembled a bivouac; the number of travellers was constantly increasing; temporary cabins were constructed out of chests and trunks, till the crew could hardly pass along; the cabins were choked full, so that we could scarcely stir; and the worst of it was that, though the sea was perfectly smooth, the company were more seasick than I have ever seen any other people at any time.

The ladies came on board wrapped in furs; silk dresses were rustling on every side; beautiful Chinese shawls, pearls, and jewels displayed themselves to admiring eyes; and even waiting-women were glorious in their embroidered shoes and silk

stockings: but the effect of this rich dress was somewhat marred by little round straw hats, like those of the men, that suited the rest of the costume very ill. All this finery was also by no means tastefully arranged; nor were the colours, which were of the showiest, well-chosen.

The Peruvian women have very small well-shaped feet; and they are so desirous to show them to advantage, as never, I was told, to wear a pair of shoes as much as a week. They require them too, to fit as closely as our *élégantes* do their gloves; and, on putting a shoe on, they bend it backwards, so as to force the foot into the smallest possible size.

*January 17th.* We now kept constantly in sight of lofty barren mountains, which increased in height as we approached Callao.

At Huacho, a small fortified town, surrounded, like Payta, by a desert, we made a short halt; but a very short one, as the captain was in a hurry to get to Callao, where he ought to have been the day before; but the steamer went very slowly. On an average we did not do more than six miles an hour; for, as there is no competition, all the bad old boats are sent to this station, and travellers have no remedy.

The small town of Callao has the most consider-

able harbour in Peru. It is very much sheltered, being so surrounded by mountains; but there is no appearance of forest or of vegetation. The town has 7000 inhabitants, and there is something of an oriental character about its style of building. The houses are flat and low, with terraced roofs and irregular windows, often only closed with latticed wooden balconies, that hang against the wall. They are built partly of unburnt brick and partly of reeds plastered with clay. The rooms are gloomy, as they usually receive light only from one window opening on the roof, not glazed, but, as I have said, closed with a wooden lattice, and by shutters that are opened and shut by means of a cord hanging down into the room.

The fortress, which since the declaration of independence bears the name of *Independenzia*, is a very important one, of considerable size, and built in the form of an octagon. It is in good repair, and surrounded by a deep broad ditch, which, by means of a communication with the sea, can be readily filled with water.

I stayed a day at Callao, and, before anything else, I visited the market, which really astonished me by the rich abundance of productions of both hemispheres that it exhibited. The various grades

of elevation in the Cordilleras offer, in fact, all the climates in the world; and thus it happens that you see, by the side of the juiciest grapes, the golden granadilla, the peach, and the mango; the apricot and apple lie along with the plantain and *chirimoya*, or, as the English call it, the custard-apple, which is by many travellers regarded as the very queen of fruits, though I should, myself, be inclined to give the preference to the mangostan of Java, which is more delicately flavoured, and at the same time light and wholesome. The *granadilla* is the fruit of a species of passion-flower, with a flavour much like our gooseberry. Peaches, apples, and apricots are, however, much inferior to those of Europe, and scarcely to be eaten without cooking. One cause of this inferiority is probably the careless cultivation; for the natives are almost too idle to do anything, and there are few, if any, European planters. Of the kinds of corn, barley and maize are most cultivated, and form the chief article of food for the common people. I was struck with a black variety of maize that I saw lying among the heaps of yellow, whitish-brown, and other colours. The spikes are very small, and I understood it was chiefly used for pastry.

In the afternoon I walked to the spot near the



fortress where stood the old town of Callao, which in 1746 was destroyed by a terrific earthquake; a part of the city fell into the sea, the remainder entirely to ruins, and 3000 people lost their lives. There is now nothing more to be seen of it than a few fragments of walls and some heaps of bricks. Many travellers have maintained that a part of the ruined city may be seen beneath the sea, but this is a very common romantic fiction.

A more pleasant walk was to the gardens and other plantations which lie along the banks of a rivulet in the vicinity of Callao. Sandy and desolate as the country appears, only a little water is required to bring forth a rapid display of vegetable life. On the banks of this rivulet a dozen German settlers have established themselves, and they obtain very fine harvests. They devote themselves especially to the cultivation of grapes, which spread along and climb over the stones, forming a perfect network, but never rising much more than a foot from the ground.

About two years ago the government of Peru sent an invitation to German emigrants to come to this country, and offered them many advantageous conditions; and a band of not less than 2000 soon left their homes for this far-distant land, where they

hoped to find a new home. But the ships were over-crowded, the food and water bad, they were treated like the slaves brought from Africa, and more than the half of the unfortunate creatures died on the voyage. When the remainder reached Peru they found themselves cheated and defrauded in all kinds of ways. Instead of being sent to a climate suitable to them, they had land assigned them in the neighbourhoods of Callao and Lima, where the great heat is almost mortal to European workmen. The advances of money made to them stood in no proportion to the dearness of the land, and the poor creatures soon sunk into misery and disease.

The Hamburg consul, M. Rodewald, espoused their cause with zealous humanity. He exerted himself for them with the Government of Peru; he wrote concerning them to Germany; and set on foot subscriptions, besides affording them extensive assistance from his own resources. Most of them died nevertheless, leaving behind them disconsolate widows and children; the latter, of course, bearing the climate better, as they were not employed in field labour. Most cruel and unpardonable is it of a Government to hold out these delusive inducements to emigration, and then abandon those whom they have enticed to their ruin! Would that anything

I could say might tend to warn intending emigrants not to take so important a step without previously making themselves in some measure acquainted with the country to which they are going, and obtaining information concerning the climate, the food, and all the resources that may be at their disposal; and fain would I warn them against too easily giving credit to the representations of interested agents. When the poor have been once enticed from their homes to a distant country, as they seldom have the means of returning, they are given over utterly helpless to whatever fate may await them.

The fault, it must be added, lies, in some cases, more with the emigrants themselves than with any other. They often fancy that, if they can only get to some distant part of the world, they shall find, as the saying is, roast-pigeons flying into their mouths; and, when they discover that this has been a mistake, they grow discontented and dejected. An emigrant should always expect that, at least in the first few years, he will have harder work and more difficulties to encounter than if he had stayed at home. I have, nevertheless, seen some who had been settled in their new country but a very short time, sitting down to table with fine meat, vegetables, and good bread, with tea and coffee regularly twice a day, who were

nevertheless dissatisfied because they had to work, as they must assuredly have done had they stayed in the old country, with far less reward for their labours. Many a time would they there have barely been able to satisfy their hunger on potatoes or bad bread.

Before proceeding to Lima, the capital of Peru, I will remind the reader in a few words of some particulars concerning it. The estimated area of Peru is between 400,000 and 500,000 square miles, its population about 2,150,000 persons. It is divided into eleven departments, and these again into sixty-three provinces. The state revenues are estimated at 10,000,000 of dollars, and its expenses at the same sum; but the national debt amounts to 60,000,000 of dollars, and a very small part of the revenue is set aside for its liquidation.

The legislative power is in the hands of a congress of two chambers, twenty-one senators, and eighty-one deputies, who assemble in Lima every other year. The executive power and the right of appointing the ministry belongs to a president, who holds office for four years. The name of the present one is José Rufino Echenique.

This form of government has subsisted since the year 1824, when the country renounced the Spanish rule; but Callao, the only fortress, maintained itself,

under General Rodin, for several years, and then only capitulated under very honourable conditions. This General Rodin, though a brave man, bears in other respects a very indifferent character; and the long defence he made is ascribed rather to motives of private and selfish interest than to his attachment to his sovereign; since he had laid up immense stores of provisions, which he sold from time to time, at exorbitant prices, to the wealthy persons who had taken refuge in the fortress. In their distress they had, it is said, to purchase the means of existence of him almost for their weight in gold; and, after the surrender of the fortress, the general returned to Spain with a most enormous fortune.

Since the declaration of independence by Peru so many revolutions have taken place there, that the tranquillity of a few years even is something uncommon. All these revolutions have originated with the military. Officers of rank, coveting the dignity of the presidency, have usually commenced the disturbances and gained over the soldiers; but at the time of my arrival in Peru the country was in a state of insurrection, and this time it originated with civilians. The troubles had commenced in the September of the preceding year, on account of the bad administration of the public reve-

nue, which was known to have greatly increased since the discovery of the guano \*; and yet nothing had been done either for the public benefit or towards the liquidation of the national debt. The President is accused of having appropriated to himself and his party a considerable portion of the riches of the country. In order to effect this the more easily, he is said to have invited people to bring forward unsettled claims for provisions, compensations, &c., from the times of preceding revolutions. The people who had these claims had long ceased to count on them, and in many cases had even lost or destroyed the papers; others were dead, and the heirs had no vouchers to show. It was then privately hinted to them that there would not be much difficulty made about acknowledging their claims, only that they must put down higher sums, in order that, for the sake of appearances, something might be struck off. And the President and his party then, through their agents, bought up these papers for small sums. By these intrigues, and by having the handling of the state paper and the management of the guano

\* It is calculated that, on the Chiucha Islands alone, there is still more than 12,000,000 of tons of guano, which the Government is selling on its own account in Europe and America, and getting for it from fifteen to twenty-five dollars a ton.

trade, he is said to have made some millions of dollars.

The present revolution had not reached as far as Lima when I came, and the President had the military on his side, and paid, partly out of his own funds and partly from those of the state, an army of spies, who seized and delivered to the government every person on whom the smallest suspicion fell. Many had been banished, others were still languishing in prison.\*

For several years Peru has had the misfortune to be governed by covetous and grasping men, whose chief care has been devoted to the filling their own pockets.

On the 19th of January I went to Lima, where the before-mentioned Hamburg consul, M. Rodewald, was so good as to receive me into his house; a favour that was so much the more important to me, as in this country the Spanish language is almost exclusively spoken, and I was not, at that time, acquainted with it.

From Callao to Lima, a distance of six miles, a railroad has been opened since 1851, though the ascent is no less than 450 feet; and in going back from Lima the steam is not used at all. What struck me as most peculiar in this railway is, that it

\* I afterwards learned from the papers, that the revolution had ended with the fall of the President.

runs through a great part of the suburbs of Lima without being in any way whatever railed off. The locomotives run through the streets just as ordinary carriages do in other places ; children play about the house-doors ; horsemen turn their steeds hastily aside, and the engine dashes, roaring and snorting, through the midst of them. Notwithstanding this apparent danger, however, no accident had before taken place ; but while I was there an ass got upon the rail, and the engine, passing over it, was thrown off the line, by which several people were hurt and one killed.

The city of Lima, containing at present 96,300 inhabitants, was founded by Pizarro on the 6th of January, 1534 ; and on the 18th of June of the same year he laid the first stone of the Cathedral. The town is divided into regular quarters, and the River Rimac, which is crossed by a handsome stone bridge of five arches, runs through it, separating it into two unequal portions. The streets are long, and tolerably broad and straight.

The Plaza grande is a fine quadrangle, with arcades along two sides, beneath which are shops containing rich and elegant goods ; the third side is occupied by the Cathedral and the episcopal palace, and the fourth by the palace of the President, and the house of senators. The word palace is a very high-sounding



title for such exceedingly shabby-looking buildings ; but they have rather a better appearance from the court-yards than from the outside. That of the President is particularly disfigured by a number of little' booths, that are plastered on to it. In the middle of the square rises a tolerably well-looking fountain ; but it is constantly surrounded by asses and their drivers, the water-carriers of the city, as no house in Lima is supplied in any other way than by them, and many families have to pay five or six dollars a month for it.

On the south side of the square now occupied by ordinary dwelling houses once stood the palace of Pizarro ; and here he was murdered on the 26th of June, 1546. He was sitting at table with his friends when the conspirators surrounded the palace, and, raising the cry of " Death to the tyrant," rushed in. He perished sword in hand ; but the exact spot is not known, nor the place where he is buried. Some say it was in the Cathedral, others, in the Franciscan church ; but I have inquired at both places, without being able to find out the spot.

Churches and convents are very numerous in Lima, and the clergy are proprietors of innumerable buildings, as well as of extensive landed estates. One-fifth of the town is said to belong to them, and

many of the convents possess a revenue of from 80,000 to 100,000 dollars. Among the churches, those that pleased me best, after the Cathedral, were the Franciscan, Augustin, and Dominican, as well as that of St. Peter ; and there are several others in various parts of the town that are well worth seeing. They are in a noble style of building — their cupolas grandly proportioned, and the interior decorated with wood-carvings in bas-relief, all richly gilt. The wealth of these churches, in silver, gold, and jewels, is not now so great as it once was ; and the silver tabernacle and silver pillars to the altar in the Cathedral are so dirty, that you would never discover of what precious materials they were made if it were not pointed out to you.

At grand festivals these churches are magnificently decorated with velvet and flowers, and lighted up like fairy palaces, while the saints appear in full dress, with all their jewellery, and the priests in robes embroidered with gold. Unluckily, however, none of these fêtes took place while I was there, and the saints wore only their every-day clothes ; and very ugly saints they are ; but the churches themselves are at all times most imposing in their grandeur. Their majestic vaults and lofty, long-drawn aisles, their side altars and niches, with columns and

statues supporting them, their walls adorned with pictures and statues, except when the faces happened to be absurd caricatures, or the figures tricked out in some ludicrous costume that reminded you more of heathenism than of Christianity; the solemn twilight gloom, through which a lamp here and there glimmered like a star; the profound silence, or the voice of the priest officiating at some altar, most certainly tend more to elevate the mind and inspire solemn thought than mere white walls in prosaic nakedness.

It cannot be denied, I think, that the Catholic form of Christianity is better adapted than any other to make proselytes among heathen nations, were the priests only different from what they are. But you hear the same complaints against them in all countries, — most of them are only priests as long as they stand before the altar; when they have once left the church, they seldom think more of their high and holy vocation.

The external devotion of the people here is still remarkable. Many take off their hats when they only pass a church, and all do if the bells are ringing for morning or evening prayers; the foot-passenger stops, the ass-driver alights from his beast, conversation ceases, and all hearts seem to be raised in supplication to the invisible God. But in a few minutes

the customary doings begin again ; the ass-driver ill-uses the poor animal he owns, the tradesman cheats his customer, and the whisper of prayer is exchanged for the whisper of slander.

There is no public building in Lima worth mentioning except the churches ; and, on the whole, the city does not make a very advantageous impression on the stranger. The suburbs show, like oriental cities, nothing but long walls and low doors, and very few windows ; and it is only towards the centre of the town that the streets begin to have a pleasanter appearance ; but there the houses have high arched entrances and numerous windows. The wooden latticed balconies are found everywhere : the roofs are flat at Callao, and most rooms here, as well as there, receive light only from one window opening on the roof.

Here, as in the East, the façade, or, as we might say in Hibernian style, the *front* of the house, is at the back. The reception rooms lie opposite the great house-door, and the walls towards the inner court are adorned here and there with handsome figures ; and the court, though not paved, is decorated with flower-pots. The saloon, into which you can look through the house-door, is prettily fitted up, and the windows and glass-doors ornamented with

draperies; and through this you can see, in the background beyond the court, a small garden. It is really a pleasure in the evening to walk through the streets and stop and look into the houses when these rooms are lighted up and the graceful forms of the Peruvian ladies give animation to the pretty picture.

The handsomest house of all is that of the old Spanish family *Torre-Tagle*; and this has a façade with many architectural decorations towards the street. The house is now in possession of a collateral branch of the family.

Of the public institutions, I visited the Museum, the Academy of Fine Arts, and the Library. The Hospital I did not go to, as the yellow fever was raging at the time and there were many patients lying there.

The Museum is one of the most deplorable that I ever saw. Every species of natural production is represented by some specimen poor in itself, and spoiled by neglect, and the insects and *crustaceæ* are wanting altogether. Instead of Peruvian insects, there are half-a-dozen boxes with the most ordinary Chinese beetles, and of marine productions there is nothing at all. The most valuable things in it are some very well-preserved mummies in a crouching

posture, as they were taken from the graves of the Incas; as well as a tolerably large collection of ancient Peruvian drinking cups and other vessels. The oil portraits of former reigning Incas represent them handsome well-formed men, with noble features. There are also pictures of the Spanish viceroys, life-size; but precisely the one that excites most interest, that of Pizarro, has been placed in such an unfavourable light, and is so blackened by age, that you can hardly see more of it than the outline.

The Academy of the Fine Arts is nothing more than a wretched drawing-school for mere beginners. How it came by such a grand title I could not make out, for it possesses neither statues nor busts, nor a single oil picture, or even a large drawing. All that I saw were a few young pupils occupied in drawing eyes, ears, and noses.

The Library contains, in two handsome saloons, no less than 30,000 volumes and some very valuable manuscripts; but I could not find a line in the handwriting of Pizarro.

The Alameda and the bridge are the public promenades of Lima. The former consists of some avenues of trees along the banks of the river, and has the arena for bull-fights on one side and at the end an establishment for cold-bathing. The mountains

can be seen from almost every street, particularly the Cerro de San Cristoval, 1275 feet high; on the top of which a cross has been erected, that attracts a great number of pilgrims every year.

The cemetery, called the Pantheon, lying outside the city, is very beautiful. It was founded in the year 1807, and the chapel, as well as the house of the superintendent, is built in extremely pretty style. The gardens are divided into several departments, intersected by beautiful avenues of trees, and enclosed by high walls. They contain, besides many places for graves, more than 1000 niches for walling up the dead; and in these are deposited the bodies for which the ground has been purchased in perpetuity. In the other graves they remain only until the ground is wanted again, when the bones are collected, and put into large stone vaults, or common graves. The bodies of children are, after lying a short time, piled up in a wooden tower, the door of which I opened, and saw great numbers of the little remains wrapped in cloths. These are the children of the more opulent classes, the poor are buried in large common graves. Before the construction of this Pantheon, the dead were often buried inside the churches.

Besides this institution, by which the unhealthy

practice of burying within the city is avoided, the public health of Lima is promoted by many elaborately constructed canals, which are filled from the Rimac, and run through the streets from east to west; and another sanitary provision, though of nature's contrivance, consists in a species of bird, black and as large as a common cock (whence they are called *gallinagos*), which, like the dogs in Constantinople, pick up from the streets all kinds of carion-like filth, and so contribute something towards their cleanliness. I saw these tame birds of prey also at Callao, and there, as here, they moved about in the middle of the crowded street quite at their ease.

The market I visited several times. There is a large handsome hall, that serves especially for the sale of meat, dead poultry, and vegetables. The variety of provisions was here greater than I had ever seen before, and of course the quantity also. Judging from the great number of butchers' shops, one would presume that the people eat much meat; and it seemed rather strange to me that the butchers, or at least the sellers of meat, were of the feminine gender; they did not appear to find any difficulty in handling about the huge heavy legs of beef, and distributing them in pounds to their customers. The



dead poultry, as in Italy, is not always sold whole, but you may buy a half or a quarter of a fowl if you like.

Living is very dear in Lima; a family that could be maintained in Germany for between 300 and 400 pounds, or 1500 dollars a year, would here cost certainly 4000. In every opulent house a major-domo is kept, whose business it is to look after the plate or linen, superintend the other servants, and lay in all the provisions.

The consumption of ice in Lima is extraordinary; to the value, it is calculated, of 1000 dollars a day. It is brought from North America; and costs less this way than it would if got from the neighbouring Cordilleras, whence it must be brought on the backs of mules. The ice is prepared with milk and fruit, as well as used with water and wine; and from the earliest hour in the morning the numerous ice-shops are crowded; and you may find your cook, your major-domo, with the butcheress, the milk woman, &c., sitting, in elegant tranquillity, enjoying this favourite refreshment. The ice, I may here observe, is very badly prepared, being in rough lumps, and very insipid.

The inhabitants of Lima, like those of Acapulco, Callao, and, I believe, all the Spanish-American

states, are of such mixed Indian, European, and African blood, and proceed from such an inter-ramification of races, as can be found in no other quarter of the world. Among the higher classes of creoles and old Spaniards\* there are some very beautiful girls and women; and the Lima ladies have the reputation of knowing how to increase their attractions by their rich and tasteful toilette. Their walk and deportment is considered extremely graceful; and of their pretty little hands and of their feet, set off by silk stockings, and thinnest, most closely-fitting shoes, I have already spoken.

In intellectual endowments also; namely, in natural understanding, what is called mother wit, as well as in a considerable talent for music, nature has been abundantly liberal to them; but they have, unfortunately, very little industry or perseverance to improve their natural gifts. On these points, however, I can say little from my own observation, as I was too short a time in Lima to see much of the old Spanish families, the access to which is not particularly easy to strangers. I saw them mostly

\* All whose complexions approach at all to white call themselves "Old Spaniards;" a race with which they are eager to claim kindred. Creoles are those who have been born here, but of genuine European parents.

in the boxes of the theatre (where Miss Hayes, and the not less admired tenor Mengis, as well as the distinguished violinist Hauser, were then engaged), and, as far as I can judge, I certainly think what I heard from gentlemen of the beauty and grace of the Lima ladies amply confirmed.

Only a few years ago they still wore in the street, or for going to church, a peculiar costume, consisting of a long black upper robe, called a *saya*, and the mantilla, which covered the head and hung down below the waist, leaving only just a peep-hole for one eye. In this dress, it is said, a man could not recognise his own wife; but it is now only seen at churches or in processions; for it was found, in many respects, rather too convenient, and no man liked to see it on his own wife or daughter, however he might approve it on any other lady. As a substitute for the mantilla, the women now throw a large shawl over the whole person, head and all; and this not very attractive costume is sometimes even worn at the theatre.

I never in my life saw women of the lower classes so richly and extravagantly dressed as here. You meet milk and fruit women riding their asses to market, and with their goods before them, in silk dresses, Chinese shawls, silk stockings, and em-

broidered shoes, all of staring colours; but most of the finery more or less ragged, and hanging half off. I did not think it at all became their yellow or dark-brown faces; and they often reminded me of Sancho Panza's remark concerning his lady, who, as queen of the "undiscovered islands," he says, will look like "a pig with a gold necklace."

The men, rich or poor, European or native, whenever they ride, wear the poncho over the rest of their dress, as they do in Chili; and even the women wear it when they make an excursion on horseback. Ladies of rank and wealth go only to church on foot; at other times they make use of the *calèche*, or *calesa*; a two-wheeled carriage, drawn by mules harnessed a long way off, and on one of which the driver sits. Men who have much occasion to go out, such as physicians, ride on horses or mules.

Small tradesmen, water-carriers, &c., also ride, but on asses, which they treat very ill; as is intimated by the Peruvian proverb, which says that "Lima is the heaven of women, the purgatory of husbands, and the hell of asses." Certainly, if one believed in the metempsychosis, one would have an especial dread of being metamorphosed into a Peruvian ass or a Javanese post-horse.

The llama is much better used. It is made to

work, indeed, as a beast of burden, but it is gently and tenderly treated; and one might almost say that the Peruvians have a respect for this animal. It is of the camel species, by its long neck; and from the foot to the top of its head is about five feet high. Four species of llamas are known: the *llama proper*, the *alpaco*, the *vicuna*, and the *guanaco*; but the llamas only are used as beasts of burden, as they are far more serviceable in the bad roads of the Corderillas than asses or mules, and are employed to bring down the ore from the mountains. A llama will go from three to four leagues in a day, and carry a hundred pounds; but if anything more is put upon him, he will lie down, and not stir till the extra weight is taken off.\*

These beautiful gentle animals are not often seen in the city of Lima, for they cannot well bear the heat; but while I was there there chanced to come a troop of forty or fifty of them, to fetch salt to carry to the mountains. I grieve to state, that these pretty creatures, when they are angry, have a nasty trick of spitting about them; and the saliva is so sharp and acrid, that it causes a burning pain when it falls on the skin. Another uncommon thing, besides

\* An ass will carry usually 200 and a mule 300 pounds.

the advent of the llamas, happened while I was in Lima; namely, a tolerably heavy rain came on, and lasted five or six hours; a phenomenon that the "oldest inhabitant" could not recollect to have happened before. In summer it never rains here, and in what is called the winter very seldom; and then the rain is so fine, that it is scarcely more than a damp mist, and is not sufficient to wet the stones. Thunder-storms do not take place on this side the Cordilleras.

The temperature, although Lima lies only  $12^{\circ}$  south of the equator, is never oppressively hot. I was there in the middle of the summer of the southern hemisphere, and never found the thermometer rise in the room above  $77^{\circ}$  of Fah. This temperate climate is supposed to be occasioned by the currents of cool air proceeding from the snow-covered summits of the Cordilleras, here only twenty-eight leagues off. There are, however, very frequent earthquakes. In the five weeks of my stay in Lima there were three. The first was very considerable, but yet did no damage; in the second a loud, rumbling noise, like that of thunder, was heard beneath the ground, and lasted forty seconds; and the third consisted of a few very slight shocks. But whenever an earthquake occurs, however slight, the

people rush into the streets, and fall on their knees, crying "Misericordia," while all the bells in the churches begin to ring.

One very unpleasant thing in Lima is the great insecurity, and the frequency of robbery. After six o'clock in the afternoon, when it is scarcely dark, it is thought imprudent to venture outside the gates, or on the Alameda or any other little frequented spot alone; even if you are on horseback you will be very likely to be attacked. In burglaries the thieves do not merely let themselves in at doors and windows, but climb up to the terraced roof, which is mostly of very slight materials, make an opening in it, and let themselves down into the room.

A few years ago these affairs were carried on on a still grander scale; and bands of thirty or forty men, frequently on horseback, would come in the evening to a house that did not happen to be in the most busy part of the town, and, leaving the half of their number outside to keep watch, burst in, fasten the door, and politely request the inhabitants not to disturb themselves, but merely to give them their keys, and they would find what they wanted for themselves. Before the guard outside had attracted the attention of the neighbours or passers by, and a sufficiently strong armed force could be brought

against them, the birds were long flown with their booty.

On the very frequented road from Lima to Chorillos, two leagues in length, though there are constantly mounted patrols about, it is considered dangerous to be found after six o'clock.

The Peruvian cavalry, mostly consisting of negroes, is said to be worth little; but the infantry, for which Indians from the mountains are taken, consists of much better troops; indeed, among the best in the world, as they are very brave, and capable of long endurance of hunger, toil, and hardship, though they do not on ordinary occasions look very smart, and, if they did not wear swords, could hardly be distinguished from day-labourers. On parade, however, these troops, and especially the cavalry, make a good figure; their uniforms are of white linen cloth, and their horses are handsome and well trained.

The consul, M. Rodewald, besides offering me a residence in his house, was so good as to arrange an excursion for me to the watering-place *Chorillos* and the ruins of a Peruvian temple of the *san*, which lie four leagues from it, at the village of *Lurin*, and are said to be among the most interesting of those to be seen all along the coast.

The distance from Lima to Chorillos is only two



leagues, and an omnibus goes every day, in which I travelled, while the gentlemen rode on horseback.

The road lies through a sandy plain, on which only here and there small spots of verdure like *oases* are to be seen; and the mountain masses, piled one above another, that border the plain on one side, are also without a trace of vegetation.

Chorillos itself has a dull, wretched appearance, consisting only of dirty mud houses or hovels, crowded together upon a dusty road. I should rather have taken it for a penal colony than a place that people went to for pleasure. At least I thought that only sick people who really required sea-bathing would think of going to it; but that is not the case; the ladies find, it seems, some sort of amusement in this doleful watering-place, and come, they say, for change of air and recreation; and the gentlemen are drawn thither, not only by their society, but also by the attractions of the green tables, where considerable sums are often left behind. It often happens that people are content to take what is worse for the sake of a change.

Early on the following morning I was on horseback and on my way to Lurin. We chose the road across the *Pampas'* sandy steppes; on which, however, there are some fine plantations, — *haciendas*,

as they are called, — mostly planted with sugarcane.

A league beyond Chorilloſ appeared a row of stone arches, that showed there had once been an aqueduct there; and, shortly before reaching Lurin, on turning our horses a little to the right, to a hill called *Pachacamac*, rather more than 500 feet high, we came upon the ruins of an extensive temple of the sun.

*Pachacamac* (Creator of the Earth) was the most powerful deity of the *Yunkas*; and, when they were overcome by the Incas, their idols were cast out of the temple, and replaced by images of the sun; and certain royal virgins were appointed to maintain the sacred fire; but, as the Incas had banished the *Yunkas*' gods, and forced them to worship the sun, so did Pizarro subsequently treat the Incas themselves when he conquered their country. The Christians, however, behaved much more cruelly than the heathens had done; the virgins of the sun were given up to the outrages of rude soldiers, and the people driven by fire and sword to adopt the new religion, which they could hardly do otherwise than detest, when they saw its professors thus guilty of every kind of violence and crime.

Of the temple, which we examined on all sides,

there now remains nothing but some portions of the wall, which, fragments as they are, testify of its former greatness. The few small chambers still recognisable are mere cells, which probably received their light from above. Two small fire-places are also left; and both outer and inner walls, indeed the entire edifice, appears to have been constructed of unburnt brick, with the exception of the lowest foundation, which is of hewn stone. On one wall only we found a piece of fine hard plaster, of a bright red colour, such as I have seen dug out of the houses in Pompeii.

The finer monuments of Peruvian architecture are to be found near Casco, in the interior of the country, 200 leagues from Lima.

The great art appears to have consisted in fixing the stones, without mortar, firmly one upon another, as if they were all of one piece. Even to the present day they remain so closely joined, that you cannot insert so much as the blade of a knife between them.

There is a beautiful view from these ruins over a valley that lies at their foot. The environs of Lurin are also very pretty: blooming fields and delicate shrubs cover the ground, sandy though it be. When the Spaniards conquered Peru the valley of Pacha-

camac was one of the most fertile along the whole coast, and thickly peopled; but the aqueduct in the neighbourhood of Chorillos is all that now remains to tell of those happy days.

Leaving these interesting memorials of the past, we betook ourselves to a very prosaic-looking hacienda, which belongs to the convent of San Pedro, and has attached to it large sugar plantations and many slaves. These haciendas are let out on long leases, and every improvement that the farmer makes on the land is regularly allowed for; so that sometimes the claims of the farmer amount to so much, that the proprietor is very glad if he will continue to hold the land at the lowest rent. On this estate the tenant has put up a steam-engine for crushing the sugar-cane; the first that has ever been erected in the country.

It was Sunday, and when we arrived divine service was just over; and then I saw what was certainly new to me; namely, the whole body of slaves *driven* out of the church into a division of the courtyard, and there *locked* in. They went singing and laughing, and making a noise, into their *fold*; but precisely for that reason they struck me as exactly like a herd of cattle. Never in any place else had

I seen humanity so completely degraded to the level of the brutes.

Every expectation of pleasure was now over for me, for I could not get this sad picture out of my thoughts. The poor creatures sent for brandy, which their owner sells to them, and proposed, I was told, to pass the day in dancing, singing, and drinking.

I have been in Brazil and other countries where the ground was filled by slaves; but I have always seen them better clothed than they were here, and I never before saw them locked up.

At the declaration of independence by Peru slavery was not abolished; but it was decreed that, after the lapse of twenty-five years, the children born of slaves should be free. This twenty-five years was subsequently prolonged to fifty; but no slave can be imported any more, and the moment a slave touches the Peruvian soil he is free, even though he should have been first taken as a slave out of the country. On the whole, notwithstanding the circumstance that had struck me so painfully, they do not appear to be ill treated, especially the domestic slaves, and the law does much to protect them. A slave who is ill used can sell himself to another master, and he is

usually allowed time and opportunity for earning money for himself, in order that he may be able to purchase his freedom. Most of them, however, prefer spending their little earnings in brandy, and leaving their owners to take care of them.

M. Rodewald, when he offered a slave his freedom, had the present declined, with the remark from the slave, that he should lead a much easier life if his master would keep him.

We went back to Chorillos through the *plagas*, that is by the sea-coast; and, after passing the night there, went on the next morning to *Miraflores*, a village half way between Chorillos and Lima, and to which families also go for pleasure during the summer months, and to enjoy a better and purer air than that of the city. There are here pretty *ranchas*, that is, country houses with gardens, and a handsome square. Altogether *Miraflores* is a pleasant place, and, compared with *Chorillos*, a little Eden.

I passed here two very agreeable days, in company with two highly accomplished and intelligent women, Mesdames Smith and Dardnell. The first is an excellent painter, the latter gifted with a very fine voice; and both are most amiable and estimable mothers of families.

When I got back to Lima I began to think of continuing my wanderings.

My intention when I came there had been to cross the Cordilleras to Loretto, on the River Amazon, and to proceed thence with the Brazilian steamer to Para, on the eastern coast of America.

But the revolution hindered the execution of this plan, as it had taken precisely the direction of the regions through which I should have had to pass; and I should not have been able to procure either mules or drivers, for in the civil wars friend and foe alike seize on both men and animals, to turn the first into soldiers, and employ the cattle for the cavalry and artillery.

In vain did I wait in Lima till towards the end of February: the situation of affairs did not alter, and I was therefore strongly advised to try my fortune at Quito. I was so much the more inclined to follow this advice, as M. Muncajo, the chargé d'affaires for the republic of Ecuador, made me liberal promises in the name of his government. He told me the President was his particular friend, and that he would give me letters to him, as well as to other persons holding high and important offices; and he added, that he did not doubt the President would

himself be greatly interested in my journey, and afford me every assistance.

Relying on this assurance, and furnished with a dozen of these, as I imagined, most important letters, I set off in high spirits, and went on board the steamer *Santiago*, which was to take me to Guayaquil, on my way to Quito.



## CHAP. V.

ECUADOR. — JOURNEY TO QUITO. — TRIP ON THE GUAYA.  
 —SAVANETTA. — THE TAMBOS. — THE CAMINO REAL. —  
 GUARANDA. — PASSAGE OF THE CHIMBORAZO. — THE  
 ELEVATED PLAINS OF AMBATO AND LATACUNGA. —  
 ERUPTION OF THE COTOPAXI. — THE HACIENDAS AND  
 THEIR OWNERS.

IN the steamer Santiago I found the cabins full, so that I could only get a place in the temporary one erected on the deck; but how to get to this was the question, for I had gone on board in the evening, and there was no one to show me the way, nor the smallest lamp to light me. I groped about in the darkness, got over the axle of the paddle-wheels, through puddles and dirt, and directed my steps at random towards the left. But there I ran against the horns of some oxen, who (as I found the next morning) were tied up about two yards from the entrance to the cabin.

As I had been unsuccessful in going to the left, I now tried the right, and tumbled over a heap of

coals that had not been removed. The arrangements of this steamer, in short, were eminently comfortable, so that it was not surprising if travellers had to pay a high price for them.

On the 1st of March we reached Guayaquil. In this, the most important sea-port of the state of Ecuador, there is no such thing as a hotel or inn; and, in order to obtain some kind of shelter, every traveller must bring letters to some private family. I had none, but I ventured, without a letter, to present myself to the Hamburg consul, M. Garbe, and was received in the most hospitable manner into his house.

The republic of Ecuador, or Equator, threw off the yoke of the mother country in 1830. The population at present amounts to about 700,000, and the revenue is estimated at 900,000 dollars—the expenditure at considerably more; but the state has, nevertheless, no debt, for the government has a short and convenient method of adjusting the balance, by paying usually about half what it owes. The chief article of export is cacao, of which the country produces yearly from 15,000,000 to 25,000,000 pounds. Of coffee there is as yet but little, but it is of remarkably fine quality; and there are besides many valuable medicinal plants and herbs, and a' beautifully

plaited and very lasting kind of straw hat, worn throughout South America both by men and women, and of which Ecuador furnishes yearly 30,000 or 40,000.

I arrived at Guayaquil, unluckily, during the rainy season, which begins in December, and lasts till May, and is of course the most unfavourable for travelling into the interior. I was told that the roads were so bad, that all communication, except for the post, was interrupted, and that even the bearers of the mail had the greatest difficulty to get along, and were frequently obliged to climb up into trees, and scramble from bough to bough, in order to pass places where the morass was unfathomable. I thought it probable, however, that there was a good deal of exaggeration in this, and, believing that I had as much strength and perseverance as the letter-carriers, and that if they could get through so could I, I set about my preparations for the journey. Three weeks, nevertheless, I was compelled to delay setting out, for I had another attack of this abominable Sumatra fever.

During my stay the anniversary of the declaration of independence, the 6th of March, arrived, and was celebrated in the morning by high mass in the churches, and in the evening by an illumination of

the town. A most deplorable attempt at an illumination it was though; nothing more than here and there a few candles glimmering in a window; but the same childish proceeding was repeated, nevertheless, on the next evening. From this celebration slavery was to be abolished; although, according to the arrangement made at the declaration of independence, it should have lasted ten years longer.

On the 22nd of March I and the letter-carrier set off together in a small boat for the little town of Botegas. People had tried much to persuade me to take a servant with me, especially as I was not acquainted with the Spanish language; telling me that during this rainy season, when all intercourse between different places was interrupted, the tambos (little mountain inns) were uninhabited, as their occupants went down for the time into the plains; and that I should not be able to get so much as fuel or a draught of water. In spite of my great objection to people of this sort, I allowed myself to be persuaded, and the result showed that I had been quite wrong not to remain firm in my first resolution.

Botegas lies fifteen leagues up the River Guaya; and on our way thither we had a very bad night, as it was pitch dark, and the rain streamed incessantly down upon us. In the afternoon of the next day we

landed at the door-step of the first government officer in Botegas; for during the rainy season the town is so completely under water, that the inhabitants go in boats from one house to another. Fortunately the houses are built on piles. As I ascended the steps a negro, whom I took for a servant of the house, lifted my trifling luggage out of the boat, and brought it after me; but, as soon as he set it down, demanded two reals, or a quarter of a dollar\* for the service.

The official gentleman himself, as well as the rest of his servants, witnessed this proceeding, but no one of them attempted to interfere; perhaps it made some difference in their opinion of it that it was I and not they who were to be the subject of the extortion. I was obliged to pay of course, and I mention circumstances of this kind, not only to give the reader an idea of the character of this people, but also to show that, as a lonely defenceless woman, I really had often far less to fear from savages than from those who are denominated Christians. Wherever I came, indeed, in this country, I heard the "*Pobrezita Señorita*;" but those who uttered it were,

\* A dollar is worth eight reals, and twenty or twenty-one dollars go to the onza. The dollar of this country is worth one-fifth less than the Spanish dollar.

nevertheless, considering all the while how they could manage to get from the "poor lady" the small quantity of cash in her possession. I had, for instance, a letter to a merchant in Botegas, a M. Verdesotto, who came to see me; but his first question was, whether I had got a saddle of my own. I answered in the negative, and thereupon he replied that I must have one, as I could not hire them with the mules; and that he himself had one almost new, for which he had given an *onza*, but that on account of the recommendations I had brought, he would let me have it for the half. As he saw I was not much inclined to the bargain, he declared that he really could not let me go without a saddle, and rather than that would let me have it for eight dollars. This I paid him, and he sent me the said saddle; but such a good-for-nothing old worn-out thing it was, that I could scarcely make any use of it at all. This same worthy man also attempted to cheat me out of *half a dollar*. He hired a boat for me for the following day, to go to a place called Savanetta, telling me that the charge was two dollars and a half, and requesting to have the money in advance. I accidentally heard, however, from the person in whose house I was living, that the charge was only two

dollars; and so I had to trouble my honourable friend to restore the half-dollar he had pocketed.

It was in the house of the official personage with whom I resided here that I dined in the fashion of the country for the first time. The meal began with *sopa*, a kind of thin soup, with potatoes, fat, and a great deal of red pepper. Then came small pieces of roast meat, rice, roasted bananas; and, finally, *locro*, a kind of hybrid between sauce and soup, containing little bits of meat, bread, cheese, hard-boiled eggs, and red pepper. For the dessert, some fruit boiled with sugar was served under the generic name of *dulce*, or "sweet-stuff;" without which neither rich nor poor can conclude their dinner, though the latter often content themselves with molasses.

When it was time to go to-bed I was shown to a mat suspended hammock-fashion: it had no net, but fortunately there were no mosquitos. These hanging mats are greatly in favour in Peru, and considered as the most indispensable piece of furniture in a house. People lie swinging in them the whole day long; if visitors come in, mats must be found for them also; and the women perform various kinds of work while enjoying this kind of lazy exercise.

*March 24th.*—*Savanetta*, five leagues. We had parted the preceding day from the letter-carrier, who had continued his journey without interruption.

*Savanetta* is a little dirty village, with wretched straw-roofed bamboo-huts, and having every appearance of the greatest poverty; but it is said, nevertheless, that its trade is considerable. It is the chief staple place for provisions and goods brought from the Cordilleras. The high mountainous districts yield potatoes, butter, cheese, lard, eggs, &c.; and the sacks used for packing the cacao are also made in the mountains. All goods are put into little boats, or laden on the backs of mules; the former go by the *Savanetta* River to the *Guaya*, and thence to *Guayaquil*; the latter carry the salt, sugar, coffee, and some other wares, to *Quito* and the neighbouring districts.

The women at this place are so slovenly as to be quite unpleasant to look at. They wear dresses in the French style, but like their ease much too well to put them on properly, and so let them hang all open, and even sometimes have the chemise very conspicuous above them. The negro women wear the same costume; but the Indians have a dress of their own, a coloured woollen petticoat, and a



woollen-scarf three ells long and an ell broad, wound round the upper part of the body.

In the dry season the journey from Botegas is made by land; but at this time of year you go as far as four leagues beyond Savanetta in a boat. I was obliged, however, to hire the mules here, and on this occasion it appeared that my servant had played me a trick. I had engaged him to go to Quito (whither he was going at all events), under the express condition that I should pay for a mule for himself, but not another for his baggage; but, when I was getting into the boat at Guayaquil, I noticed that he had rather a large quantity, though he pretended it did not belong to him but to the boatman; that they were things he had to take here and there, &c. Now, however, it turned out that they did belong to him; that he was going to Quito on a trading expedition, and could not do without a mule merely to carry his luggage, — which mule was of course entered in my bill. Fortunately my journey did not, on the whole, come so dear as I had anticipated, and the charge for a mule to Quito was only ten dollars.

The night I passed at Savanetta was a very disagreeable one, and, though I had not come without recommendations, they did not enable me to form a

very favourable idea of the hospitality of the country, which is indeed far below what I have experienced among the Arabs, the Bedouins, or even the savages of Borneo and other countries.

In Botegas one person to whom I had a letter defrauded me, as I have said, in the matter of the saddle; the other, in whose house I stayed, gave me only a mat to sleep on, though everybody else in the house had a bed under a mosquito-net; and he then allowed me to depart in the morning, though it was nine o'clock, without offering me anything to eat. At this place (Savanetta) I had to go into a sort of cook-shop, that I might not be quite starved, and sleep at night on the ground in the room with many other people, all comfortably enveloped in mosquito-nets; but no one offered me one, though there were swarms of mosquitos.

*March 25th. Plagas, four leagues.* We did not get off till nine o'clock, and then went the first league in a little boat, which the people rather pushed and dragged than rowed; and after this we were kept waiting for a whole hour for the mules. The place was a mere marsh; but, as we could do nothing else, we seated ourselves upon some building stones, and waited as patiently as we could. When at length we were again *en route* we found

the roads very bad, as we had continually to wade through morasses and water ; but still the matter had been exaggerated to me in the description. A great compensation for the badness of the road was also offered in the sight of the fine woods through which we passed ; although the trees were neither very tall nor very large, the forest displayed such rich exuberance of the most varied and exquisite vegetation, as I have never seen equalled except in Brazil ; and when a sunbeam now and then pierced through the clouds, it seemed to call into sudden life a crowd of the most gaily-coloured butterflies and *libellulines*, to hover in swarms round the flowers. Some of these lovely creatures became my booty, for as a good sportsman is never to be found without his gun, I take care always to have my butterfly-net in readiness ; and, as we rode very slowly, I could make prisoners without dismounting.

In Plagas I entered for the first time one of the *tambos*, that is, public-houses, mostly wretched hovels, just large enough to contain the owner and his family, shelter a few guests from the weather, and furnish the *arriero* or mule-driver with a dram, his beast with fodder, and the traveller, if he is in luck, with a portion of *sopa*. We had not this good fortune, for the landlord had not expected any tra-

vellers, and had cooked so little that there was nothing to spare for us; and as to setting to work to prepare a meal expressly for us, that was altogether too much trouble. As, however, I had bread and cheese with me, and of water there was no lack, I made myself content; though for the night I had to make my couch in the veranda outside the sitting-room.

*March 26th. Torje, six leagues.* This day we got a more correct idea of the roads of this country during the rainy season, and were not at all surprised that people are unwilling to travel at this time — indeed never do, unless summoned by the most important business. We had to go much up hill, and the ground was so slippery and sticky that the cattle slipped all sorts of ways, from hole to hole, and from puddle to puddle; and it was well when they could find the bottom at all, and struggle out again, for very frequently they went in so deep that it was necessary to dismount, take off their loads, and pull them out. Precisely at the very worst place we had to go on foot. I could scarcely get on at all, but slipped and fell almost at every step: I called to my servant for help, but I was only a woman, and unfortunately his mule was already paid for; so he quietly went on his way, and left me to my fate. Fortunately, one of the arrieros, an Indian, took compassion on me,

dragged me out of the pool, and helped me on; but to every league we took full two hours.

Many deep rushing torrents crossed our path, though in summer there is scarcely water enough to cover the bed of the river. The country was very fine, and we had splendid glimpses of valleys traversed by hills and embosomed in mountains, the first range of the Cordilleras.

In the tambo at Torje we found quite splendid accommodation, namely a boarded floor to sleep on and sopa to eat. Everything was indeed disgustingly dirty; but one must not be hard to please in this country, but thank God when one can get a roof over one's head, and a hot dinner, more particularly at this time of year, when so many of the tambos are closed, or, if not, quite unprepared for the reception of travellers.

We were this day so thoughtless as to ride on before our arrieros, and the consequence was I could get nothing out of my luggage for the night, not even my blanket, and could hardly sleep for the cold, as the nights here are very sharp. The laden animals could not, on account of the horrid roads, get to Torje.

*March 27th.* Bogia, two leagues. This morning we could not get away till nine o'clock, as we had to

wait for the mules. The roads were, if possible, worse than those of yesterday, and we had to climb a mountain of considerable height; but fortunately we had found at Torje a train of empty, and healthy mules, that belonged to the same owner from whom we had hired ours; so the luggage was immediately taken from the tired animals and distributed amongst the fresh ones. But notwithstanding this help the people almost despaired in some places of being able to get on anyhow, and it was determined to enter the first tambo we might come to, let it be what it would.

When I got in I was so covered with mire from head to foot, that I looked as if I had been taking a mud-bath; and when I took off my cloak and shoes, and gave them to my servant to clean, he took not the slightest notice, but let them lie where I had put them. He rendered me, in fact, no service whatever; and it really seemed as if I had brought him with me for the pleasure of paying for the food of him and his mule.

I was obliged to wash my cloak and my shoes myself; and the worst of it was that I could hardly procure water enough for the operation; for, though there is everywhere in this region a superabundance of both water and wood, you never find any store of either in the houses; for the people are too lazy

to bring in what lies actually before their doors. The water they fetch in small vessels that hold about two quarts, for it would be too hard work to carry a larger one. For washing the hands and face you get, at most, a teacupful; and I have actually seen the potatoes washed in the same water that had served to wash first themselves and then their dishes. With wood they are no less economical; and getting a fire to dry your clothes is out of the question, for there is hardly enough to boil the sopa.

The tambo at Bogia was a very sorry one, so small that there was hardly room in it for the family and the fireplace; and I had to make my bed on a wooden bench outside: but the projection of the roof is generally sufficient to protect you from the rain,—a thing particularly necessary for us, for it rained almost incessantly the whole way. The heavy clouds only now and then opened for a moment, to afford us a glimpse of the wonderfully beautiful scenery we were passing through;—but what enchanting glimpses they were of “mountains piled on mountains to the skies;” and the loveliest valleys lying cherished in their laps, far, far below us!—so far that the dashing, roaring sound of the cataracts was entirely lost to us, and we saw only their light, silvery gleam. What must this journey

be in the fine season, when even these moments were more than sufficient to compensate me for all the toils and sufferings I had to undergo!

This night, about eleven o'clock, I felt four regular shocks of an earthquake, proceeding from south to north, and following pretty quickly one upon another. I had scarcely time to arrive at the conviction that it was an earthquake, and to spring from my bed, when the inhabitants came rushing out of the hut, and threw themselves on their knees with the usual cry of "Misericordia."

As soon as the danger was over, they informed me that this earthquake and two others that they had recently experienced proceeded from the volcano of Catopaxi, which at present was in a state of activity such as had not been witnessed for fifty-seven years.

*March 28th. Tamboco*, six leagues. This day, as well as yesterday, we were climbing up the Augas Mountain; and a part of the way, called, moreover, the "*Camino Reale*," was, I think, without exception, the most breakneck path I ever traversed in all my journeyings. I had to alight from my mule, and, in order to keep my feet at all, was obliged to go bare-foot, like the Indians, which was even more than usually disagreeable, as the mountain streams that



poured in a most disrespectful manner over this "Royal Road" were intensely cold.

Instead of fine prospects we had now only mists and clouds; sometimes descending upon us in such thick heavy masses, that we could not see thirty paces off. Sometimes they left the tops of the mountains partially uncovered, but entirely hid all that lay below. Sometimes there would be a rent in the grey, shroudlike covering, and through this, as through a window, we looked down upon blooming landscapes smiling in the golden sunshine. The picture was especially striking from the strongly marked transition in the vegetation from the tropical to the temperate zone. Here flourished palms, cacao-trees, bananas, sugar-canes, and coffee, and, a little higher up, corn, clover\*, and potatoes, would remind me of my European home.

When you see such lovely, smiling landscapes, you are apt to imagine that the condition of the inhabitants must correspond with them; but the people here live in wretched hovels of twigs plastered with clay, in which there is no opening but the entrance, and that only serves to throw light on a scene of extreme destitution. There are in these

\* Clover attains here a height of two and a half feet.

habitations neither beds nor household utensils, nor even boxes and baskets, which are indeed unnecessary, as there is nothing whatever to put in them. The occupants sleep upon the naked ground, or at best on a sort of frame of bamboo with a mat thrown over it, and with no covering but the clothes they wear, and which they continue to wear till they drop off. Their food, too, is as poor and scanty as their clothing and habitation. The Indians live almost exclusively on barley roasted a little and pounded to meal, which they sometimes mix with water, and sometimes eat dry. If they are going on a journey they never take any other provision with them than this; and it is also eaten by the old Spaniards; but they render it somewhat more palatable by the addition of sugar. They, too, use it as a travelling store, but then they commonly mix with it, besides sugar, cinnamon and pounded cacao-nut. Prepared in this manner, it is not only an agreeable but also a very wholesome and nutritious kind of food; and it has the advantage of occupying a very small space, and of needing neither saucepan nor fire for cooking it. Soldiers, when on a march, seldom have any other kind of food than barley flour.

That the Indians are the very Pariahs of the country may be supposed, but among the old Spanish

peasants, or even the proprietors of the haciendas, you seldom see any appearance of prosperity. Many of the people, however,—for instance, the owners of the tambos, — certainly need not live in quite so wretched a style; since for the sopa and clover which they furnish to travellers they charge a tolerably high price. A few spoonfuls of this wretched stuff, that has scarcely anything in it but water and red pepper, costs a medio, that is about threepence, and you pay proportionably for the food of your mule. In summer they often take several dollars a day; and they have scarcely any expenses, for every landlord is at the same time the grower of the productions that he sells.

This afternoon a small troop of llamas came up with us, and I felt quite pleased to see these pretty creatures, with their slender necks, gentle eyes, and stately bearing, all round me. I think my fondness for them must be partly ascribed to my early studies in “Robinson Crusoe,”—a very favourite book with me in my childhood,—for with the sight of the llamas there suddenly came upon me a very vivid recollection of those juvenile days.

The tambo at Tamboco was a perfect palace compared with the preceding ones. It was built of unburnt brick, and consisted of a large apartment, fur-

nished with many wooden tressels for sleeping on. A part of it served indeed for keeping the agricultural implements in, and the whole was covered with dirt and filth; but at least one was protected from wind and weather, and not compelled to eat always in company with the keeper of the tambo.

A singular custom exists in this country, that when you arrive in a tambo where you are going to pass the night and get anything to eat, you pay for it instantly, although of course the landlord has both your mules and your luggage in his hands. It certainly does not seem to indicate that the people have a very high opinion of each other.

*March 29th.* . *Guaranda*, eight leagues. To-day, though we had here and there bad places, the road was on the whole tolerably good. We were now quite near the fine mountain-chain, the highest point of which is the Chimborazo; but clouds and mist hid from us the noble grandsire and his giant relatives. We had to content ourselves with the sight of the nearest valleys and the luxuriant plantations that covered the hills.

Guaranda is a village lying in a beautiful, almost completely circular, valley, at the foot of the Chimborazo, and I alighted at the house of a rather opu-

lent proprietor of a hacienda, and met with a very hospitable reception.

I arrived just in time to witness a little ceremony, — the burial of a child eight years old, belonging to rich parents. In small villages anything will make a sensation and bring people together, especially in a country like this, where people are scarcely ever at work, and have always time enough on their hands ; and I had therefore an excellent opportunity of seeing both the genteel society of the place and its opposite, the *laidé* as well as the *beau monde* assembled.

The body of the infant was placed in a sitting posture in a sort of upright box, draped with white muslin, &c., decked with gold and silver fringe and flowers. It was carried on poles, and the head of the child fastened by a string passed round the neck, to the upper part of the box, but so loosely that it nodded this way and that, and had a horrible appearance, as if it were hanging. A band of music followed, consisting of two violins and a harp, the latter resting on the backs of two boys, and from time to time the player struck a mournful complaining sort of chord. Only when it reached the burial ground was the body placed in a coffin.

The people here have a much more healthy ap-

pearance than in the warm regions near Guayaquil; and the children especially, with their red cheeks and large flashing eyes, were very pretty. There was also no want of beautiful girls and women, though they were chiefly to be found amongst the more opulent classes.

The pure Indians are far from handsome, but of no unpleasing expression, though their heads look compressed, and their bodies stunted. Many of them have their eyes rather narrow cut; though fine eyes, nevertheless, are sometimes to be seen among them. Their noses are broad, but not so flat as those of the Malays, nor are their mouths so large and ugly, and their jaws are well formed, and their teeth dazzling white. Their complexion is a dirty-looking brownish yellow; but what disfigures them most is their hair, which hangs in ragged disorder quite over their faces. If it were neatly arranged, they would really not look so much amiss.

The dress of the old Spaniards, as well as of the Indians, is like that of Peru. The women wear shawls thrown over the head so as to conceal the half of their faces; and even at home, they often take the same method of covering their untidy, dirty dresses; and they envelope themselves so in these shawls that they can hardly make any use of their

hands ; but they do not care about that, as they have not exactly a passion for work. In families where there were three or four grown-up daughters I have seen the clothes and linen in a most deplorable state, and the children in rags and looking really like beggars. That did not at all distress the ladies ; but what would have troubled them would have been to lack the elaborate embroidery for the tops and bottoms of their chemises, or the same useless kind of work on their towels and pillow-cases.

In Guaranda we changed our mules ; as travellers should never allow themselves to be persuaded to take the same from Savanetta to Quito—at all events, without resting a day or two here and there ; for, with tired animals, it is not possible to cross the Chimborazo.

The 30th of March was one of the most remarkable days of my life, for on this day I crossed the grand Cordillera of the Andes, and that at one of its most interesting points, the Chimborazo. When I was young this was supposed to be the highest mountain in the world ; but the discovery since then of some points in the Himalaya, which far exceed its height of 21,000 feet, has thrown it into the second class.

We set off at a very early hour in the morning,

for we had eleven leagues, mostly over dreadful roads, and on a constant steep ascent, before us. For this distance there was no kind of shelter in which to pass the night.

At first it was really terrible. I was compelled as before to dismount at the worst places; and the sharp mountain air had begun to affect my chest severely. I was oppressed by a feeling of terror and anxiety, my breath failed me, my limbs trembled, and I dreaded every moment that I should sink down utterly exhausted; but the word was still "forwards," and forwards I went, dragging myself painfully over rocks, through torrents and morasses, and into and out of holes filled with mire. Had I been at the top of the Chimborazo, I should have ascribed the painful sensations I experienced to the great rarefaction of the air, since it frequently produces symptoms of the kind; indeed the feeling is so common as to have had a name given to it. It is called "veta," and lasts with some people only a few days, but with others, if they remain in the high regions, as many weeks.

After the first two leagues the way became more rocky and stony, and I could at least keep my seat on my mule. We had continual torrents of rain, and now and then a fall of snow, which mostly



melted, however, as soon as it touched the ground, though it remained lying in some few places, so that I may say I travelled over the snow; but the clouds and mists never parted for a single moment, and I got no sight of the top of the Chimborazo,—a thing that I grieved at much more than at my bodily sufferings.

From Guaranda to the summit of the pass is reckoned six leagues, and the mountain there spreads into a sort of small plain or table-land, around which it falls abruptly on every side except the north, where the cone of the Chimborazo rises almost perpendicularly. On this small elevated plain a heap of stones has been thrown together by travellers; according to some merely as a sign that the highest point of the pass is here attained, but others consider the stones as the memorial of a murder committed here, some years ago, on an Englishman, who undertook to cross the Chimborazo accompanied only by a single *arriero*. Perhaps, he might have done so in safety, had he not had the imprudence, on all occasions when there was anything to pay, to display a purse well filled with gold. This glittering temptation the guide could not withstand, and when he found himself alone with the unfortunate traveller in this solitary region, he

struck him a fatal blow on the back of the head with a great stone wrapped in a cloth,—a common method of murder in this country. He concealed the body in the snow; but both deed and doer were discovered very soon by his offering one of the gold pieces to change.

Wearied as I was, I alighted from my mule, and got a stone to furnish my contribution to the heap; and I then climbed a little way down the western side of the mountain till I came to water, when I filled a pitcher, drank a little, and then took the rest and poured it into a stream that fell down the eastern side, and then, reversing the operation, carried some thence to the western. This was an imitation, on my part, of the Baron Von Tschuddi, who did this on the watershed of the Pasco de Serro, and amused himself as I did with the thought of having now sent to the Atlantic some water that had been destined to flow into the Pacific, and *vice versa*.

The precise height of the summit of this pass I could not ascertain, as some said it was 14,000, others 16,000 feet. Probably the truth lies somewhere between the two. The perpetual snow-line under the Equator is at the height of 15,000 feet; and to reach this we should have had, at most, two

or three hundred feet more to ascend, as it seemed almost close to us. The thermometer stood here at the freezing point.

On this plateau all vegetation ceases; but within three leagues of Guaranda you still find agriculture; then follow scanty woods, with many beautiful flowers; but I did not see here any of such firs as I saw on the lofty regions of Sumatra and Java. The highest plant of this kind measured only three feet; but there were some thin, crippled little trees that struggled up the mountain as far as 14,000 feet, though only on the western side; on the eastern they had long ceased. These little trees had a very singular appearance, as they were almost entirely deprived of bark, and had no moss.

On the small plateaux of the Chimborazo bleak violent winds often blow, that drive sand and stones in the travellers' faces; and it is therefore customary for them to provide themselves with silk masks, with small pieces of glass over the eyes. In the months of August and September the passage is even dangerous to life; for the winds are sometimes so furious, as to blow both mules and riders off into the air.

We had still five leagues to go from this plateau before we reached the station for the night—a place

called *Chacquiporgo*, where there was a single miserable house; but, though the road was now good and the descent gentle, the constant rain and the rough gale made it an extremely disagreeable ride. I do not think I was ever in my life so tired as on this evening. I suffered also much pain in my chest, my teeth chattered with cold, and I was so stiff that it was the utmost I could do to drag myself from my mule to the place where I was to sleep. I was covered with mud, my hands and face not excepted; but my servant brought me no water to wash, and I was quite incapable of fetching it for myself: so, wrapping myself in my cloak, I sank down on the sleeping-place; but even there I found little rest, for my chest pained me so much, that I was obliged continually to sit up, and it was only after some hours that I was able to eat a few mouthfuls of bread and cheese. I did not, either now or in the morning, get anything warm to eat or drink; for, as in this season no travellers were expected, the landlord had left the place.

This house is the only one that has been erected by Government for travellers between Guayaquil and Quito. It consists of two chambers, with wooden benches and bedsteads and a large place for the arrieros. In no country in the world that I am

acquainted with has there been so little done for the accommodation of travellers. The tambos are so small and dirty, that they really look more like pigsties than human dwellings; and, as I have said, they offer nothing more than a shelter from wind and storm, and a little miserable meal of *sopa*. For the poor arriero there is not even this much; and he may think himself fortunate if he finds near the tambo an open shed or a roof resting on four stakes to keep off the rain, though he is still exposed to all the winds. His lot is a very hard one; he has to walk the whole day by the side of his mules through these dreadful roads, and when in the evening he reaches some place where he can unload them, he has mostly to go himself and cut them fodder, for this the landlord never takes the trouble to do, unless the clover fields are very distant. Then, when his hard day's work is over, he has nothing but barley-meal to satisfy his hunger, no bed but the damp earth on which to stretch himself, and no covering but his ragged poncho.

Not less to be pitied are the poor animals he drives; and if Lima is the "hell of asses," not the less is this true of all Peru and Ecuador; and not of asses only, but also of mules, horses, and *arrieros*.

A load of from eight to ten arobas \* is usually put on a mule or horse, and five or six upon an ass, and that frequently when the back and sides of the poor creature are perfectly raw. One day I remember I noticed all the while I was riding an unpleasant smell; and in the evening, when I alighted, I found my dress covered with blood that had proceeded from a wound on my poor beast. On bad roads I often saw people riding double, even on asses.

How differently do the Turks, the Persians, the Hindoos, even the cannibal Battakers of Sumatra, provide for the wants of the wayfarer. In the caravanserais of the former, in the serais of the Hindoos, there is one room for the traveller, and another for his attendants, besides a covered stable for the cattle. The Battakers have erected in every village a soppo, which is open without exception to natives and strangers, and in neither case is there anything to pay. How very necessary are such philanthropic institutions in such a country as that between Guayaquil and Quito, where in summer travellers and long trains of laden animals are continually passing; and at what a trifling cost could many wooden houses be erected, where there is such abundance of building material always at hand!

\* The aroba is twenty-five pounds.

*March 31st. Ambato, eight leagues.* The remarkable difference between the eastern and western sides of the Cordilleras had struck me on the preceding day. On the west the mountainous character was predominant, and the valleys were mostly deep narrow ravines and chasms, by which the mass appeared to be cleft, but at the same time there was the most luxuriant vegetation and the finest woods. On the east the mountains seemed to be pushed back by great barren table-lands, whose monotony was most wearisome to the eye. The fine woods disappear, the flowers become scarce, and large tracts are covered by a lichen that every animal disdains. Three leagues from the top of the pass I saw, on looking down, small pastures here and there; but it was not till we had descended seven leagues that any arable land appeared. A tract of nine or ten leagues is therefore uncultivated, of which a great part might certainly be made productive, and perhaps would be, but for the difficulty of the approach to it and the thinness of the population.

We rode this day between avenues of cactus and aloes; the former nine or ten feet high, the latter about twenty, and resembling some I had seen in Naples, with the flower-stem shooting directly out of the middle of the leaves.

The plateau of Ambato is among the finest; it is framed in by the Chimborazo, the Tungaraguà, and other majestic mountains; and the temperature is so warm, that the banana and other southern fruits prosper on it.

The little town of Ambato is situated in a hollow of the plateau, and when seen from above, lying amidst its gardens and fruit trees, affords a surprisingly pretty prospect. I stopped several times to enjoy the pleasure of looking at it. The town covers a great deal of ground; but the houses, when you come close to them, appear most deplorable little hovels, with no windows, and only one door. Near the *Plaza* there are some a trifle taller; and here I alighted, at the house of a hacienda owner, but the good people did not seem to understand that travellers coming in dripping wet and dirty, as was my case, like to be shown to some place where they may wash themselves and change their clothes, or that, after a ride of thirty miles fasting, one would be glad of something to eat. I had to sit down, wet and muddy as I was, amongst the family, and wait with patience more than two hours for the next meal.

The rest of the company, having been all day swinging in their hammocks and gossiping, rather liked to have a new face to stare at; but, as I do not



speak Spanish, I could afford them no other entertainment.

*April 1st. Latacunga, eight leagues.* Ascending from the bottom of the hollow, we came to a beautiful mountain stream, falling into a natural grotto, and which, after some hundred yards, again made its appearance. We had to cross some chasms, on most perilous-looking bridges; and go through others so narrow, that there was scarcely room for two mules to pass one another; and the arrieros whistled, screamed, and made all imaginable noises to testify their presence before entering one of these natural hollow ways. These places excepted, the road was good; and, for the first time since we had set out, we had no rain all day.

A great part of the elevated plain of Ambato is cultivated, but there were few villages or habitations. The Tungaragua was now appearing more and more distinctly through the clouds, and, unconnected with every other mountain, rose as a colossal cone majestically before us as we entered on the plateau of Latacunga; a much finer and larger one than Ambato, with a town of the same name at its entrance. The Chimborazo gradually now became less distinct, and other peaks, amongst which were the Cotopaxi and the Iliniga, became visible.

At Latacunga, which is also a very straggling town, I again took up my quarters in the house of a hacienda proprietor, where I was received, as indeed I had been before, in a friendly manner; but I was allowed, nevertheless, to depart in the morning without having so much as a cup of coffee or chocolate offered me, although the mornings were cold, foggy, and often rainy, and my hosts knew that I should not come to any place where I could get refreshment before the evening. I had now been much among the hacienda owners, and had several times passed whole days in their company, so that I had had opportunities enough of becoming acquainted with this class of men and their mode of life, the penury, disorderliness, and dirt of which is beyond description. The house of any tolerably well-off German peasant would be a far preferable place of sojourn to one of these haciendas. The former is often so clean, that you might with pleasure sit down to table and partake of the simple but well-cooked meal. But in these more genteel abodes the table is covered with a cloth full of holes, and so dirty, that it would puzzle you to find a white spot in it. The most necessary articles for the table were wanting, too; for instance, I recollect sitting down to dinner in a hacienda with eleven

persons, and we had not three whole knives and forks of the commonest kind amongst us. One had a fork, another a spoon, a third a knife; and when the fortunate possessor of the spoon had finished his soup, he accommodated his neighbour with a loan; and the same system was pursued with the other implements. A broken bedroom-ewer served to hold the water for drinking, and a single glass sufficed for the whole company. The children, little bright-eyed, plump, blooming things, whom it was a pleasure to look at, mostly ate with their fingers, but with an excellent appetite; their hands and their pretty faces were dirty, their clothes torn, their shoes ragged, or sometimes entirely wanting. A negress in tattered garments, or her half-naked offspring, waited at table.

'In this same house I was shown to a sleeping apartment that had certainly not been cleaned within the memory of man, and which had for its entire furniture, besides the bed, two broken chairs and some dilapidated fragments of a table. Everything I wanted I had to ask for, and a wash-hand-basin could not be had for asking, so I was obliged to go before the door to wash myself. In another of these mansions I had scarcely been half an hour in bed than I sprang out again, literally and truly covered

with vermin, and passed the remainder of the night on a chair. In the morning my skin was marked all over with red spots, as if I had had an eruptive disease. In almost every house, nevertheless, there were grown-up daughters, who, without working at all hard, might have kept everything in excellent order; but they like much better to sit all day long with a great shawl thrown over head, shoulders, and arms, doing no mortal thing but, as we Germans say, "stealing the time from God Almighty." With all this beggarliness is frequently mingled a good deal of luxury in matters that serve for show. In one of these houses the reception-room was furnished with looking-glasses and carpets; in another was a pretty good piano and a handsome English dressing-case, &c.; the ladies showed me rich dresses, Chinese shawls, and so forth: and these things, having to be transported from such a distance across the mountains, are enormously expensive. I was the more surprised at all this finery as the hacienda owners in this country are not wealthy. They have plenty of land indeed, but without either roads or markets; great towns there are none near, and, on account of the difficulty of transport, it would not answer to send their produce three or four days' journey.

*April 2nd. Machacha*, eleven leagues. We continued all day in the plateau of Latacunga. The roads were good, and usually led between hedges of cactus, and aloes, mingled with an abundance of beautiful flowers; and, encircled as they are by a garland of glorious mountains, these plateaux would be exquisitely beautiful if nature had not capriciously denied them wood and water. There is little cultivation — possibly because hands are scarce; but the land does not seem to consist of such rich soil as I had seen on the western side of the Cordilleras. The greater part of the valleys are clothed, indeed, in fresh, soft green; but there is much dust and sand, and tracts covered with masses of rock and stones, which probably the Cotopaxi in his fury has at some former period flung hither.

These giant volcanos occupied my attention the whole day. Vast columns of smoke rose up from their craters, and then rolled over all round, forming something like the trunk and crown of a gigantic tree; or volume after volume of cloud would come surging up, and then disperse in the air, and the whole picture disappear as rapidly as it had been formed. The Cotopaxi was clothed, up to its crater, with a light covering of snow, and the opposite Iliniga with so thick a one, that it was evident the rays of the

sun had no effect upon it. This night I passed very uncomfortably in a tambo.

*April 3rd.* Quito, eight leagues. In the morning I was preparing for my departure, and just about to mount my mule, when I turned to take one more look at the volcano and bid it farewell, for the road now led downwards to the lofty table-land of Quito, when it rewarded my attention by a magnificent eruption. Thick, heavy clouds of smoke burst up, through which flames darted like forked lightning rose high above the smoke into the sky, and then poured down a fiery rain upon the earth. What a spectacle would it have been at night! But as it was I was abundantly satisfied, and thanked God that, among the many wonders of nature, I had been permitted to see this surpassingly beautiful one.

If, instead of coming the way we did by Ambato, a traveller should go by Riobamba to Quito, he would pass much nearer to the Cotopaxi, and would be able to see also the ruins of a small building dating from the time of the Incas. I must own, however, that, judging from a drawing I have seen, I think he would be scarcely rewarded for the circuit he would have to make, or at all events not during the rainy season.

The weather this day was splendid, and a part of the road very good ; but then again, for about three leagues, as bad as we had ever had. There were deep clefts, &c., steep hills to cross, and huge stones lying in the midst of the road. Not even close to the capital does the present Government of this country pay any attention to either roads or bridges, and, if you find here and there a bit of road better than usual, or a solid stone bridge, you may be quite sure it dates from the time of the Spaniards.

## CHAP. VI.

QUITO. — RESIDENCES OF THE PEOPLE. — THINGS TO BE SEEN. — CHURCH FESTIVALS. — THE CLERGY AND THE GOVERNMENT. — THE INDIANS. — THE THEATRE. — RETURN TO GUAYAQUIL. — THE CHIMBORAZO. — A BULL-FIGHT. — DEADLY PERIL. — PANAMA. — JOURNEY ACROSS THE ISTHMUS. — ASPINWALL.

QUITO lies in an elevated plain, fine and extensive certainly, but by no means equal to that of Latacunga, nor surrounded by such giant mountains. You do not see the town till you come within two leagues of it, and then the sight has nothing in it at all imposing. The houses are low, and covered with sloping tiled roofs, and neither domes nor towers break their uniform monotony. The mountains Panicillo and Pichincha, against which the town is built, have neither trees nor shrubs, nor indeed have any of the mountains around. The only beauty of this region consists in the wall of mountains rising one above another, which forms a *setting* for the plateau. Looking down into the valleys you certainly see



beautiful carpets of verdure and many cultivated fields, but in this heavenly climate you expect a more striking vegetation, superb woods, luxuriant shrubs, and gorgeous flowers, which you do not find. The mountains are covered with short grass, and what cultivation there is on them you discover on a little closer examination; but the traveller who has read before coming to this city the mostly very exaggerated descriptions of the beauties of its situation, will certainly feel much disappointed.

This I confess was my case,— the nearer I came the lower sank my enthusiasm. The immediate environs of the city certainly show fields and meadows, but neither gardens nor fruit trees; the houses in the suburbs are small, half-decayed, and beyond all description dirty; the streets are full of puddles and filth, and grievously offensive to one's olfactory organs; the people clothed, if you may call it so, in the most disgusting rags. They not only stared, but laughed and pointed with their fingers at me as I came along, and sometimes ran after me, for strangers are rare in this forgotten country; and, if they are not dressed exactly like the natives, as I was not (for, although I had the poncho, I had not the little straw hat), they become objects of mockery to the populace. Nearer to the

Plaza the houses improve a little in appearance; they are of one story, and, instead of windows, have glass doors into the balconies. The square itself has some handsome buildings; amongst which are the Cathedral and the palaces of the bishop and the President; both of which have their façade adorned with rows of columns. Unfortunately the President's palace is half in ruins, especially the flights of steps in the front; but at least it is not disfigured, like that in Lima, by having little shabby booths stuck against it. The square is ornamented with a fountain, though unluckily the fountain has the trifling defect of having no water.

In the city of Quito, which is said to contain 50,000 inhabitants, there is not a single inn; and, though I had several letters of introduction, I had only one ready at hand, as the others were locked up in my trunk, and that again packed in waxed cloth.

We stopped at the house of M. Algierro, the gentleman to whom my letter was addressed; but we found it deserted, for the owner had gone with his family a few days before to his hacienda. I did not at the first moment know which way to turn; my worthless servant did not trouble himself in the least about me, and a mob soon began to collect,

laughing, screaming, and asking all kinds of curious questions. They seemed to think that, as I was without masculine protection, they might give full swing to their impertinence. The unpleasantness of my position was increasing every moment, when a gentleman came up, presented me with one of those little straw hats which the populace of Peru seem to consider an absolutely indispensable decoration for a traveller, and told my servant to bring me to his house. As soon as I got there I quickly unpacked my trunk, took from amongst my introductory letters that to the American chargé d'affairs, Mr. White; and, having arranged my dress a little, hastened, under the guidance of an Indian boy, to his house. My servant had absented himself without leave.

I had not, however, permission to walk unmolested; for my costume was still not to the liking of this highly civilised people, as I wore a mantilla and a silk bonnet, instead of having a shawl thrown over my head; and, moreover, I was alone, for the Indian boy did not count as an escort. Fortunately Mr. White's house was not very far off, and in a few minutes I was in safety. Mr. and Mrs. White immediately invited me to stay with them; and the Spanish minister M. de Paz and his wife also showed me the greatest attention.

In Quito I went a good deal into the houses of the old Spaniards, and found that among the wealthy there is, at least in the reception rooms, a great deal of luxury. The rooms are very large, which, judging from the outside of the houses, you would not expect; but here, as in Peru, the real façade is towards the back, and looks on a handsome court, decorated with flowers, fountains, and so forth.

The ladies appeared amiable, but very ignorant; which may be in some measure attributable to the out-of-the-way situation of their city; for it is very seldom indeed that a good teacher can be procured there, or that a stray artist or man of learning comes wandering that way. The good people scarcely hear of such a thing as art, science, or literature; and I do not suppose a Quito lady ever by any chance takes up any book but a devotional one. In native talent and capacity they are said, like the ladies of Peru, greatly to excel their masculine companions. They take part in all kinds of business, and especially in politics, in which they seem far more interested than the men; and it is to be observed, that the women and girls are punished for political offences just as much as men, and often imprisoned for months or even years in convents. I became acquainted here with a young and very interesting woman, the daughter-

in-law of General Algierro, who was sentenced to a year's imprisonment, but managed to keep herself concealed till the matter was pretty well forgotten, and so escaped.

The banishment of the Jesuits, which took place two years ago, was opposed by the ladies with all their might; but on this occasion the men were obstinate, so they gained the victory, and the good fathers had to depart the country.

The churches are the only things worth seeing in Quito, and amongst these that of the Jesuits, the Franciscans, the Dominicans, and the Cathedral are the most distinguished. They are in the same style as the St. Augustin's Church at Lima, richly decorated and gilt from the roof to the floor, with beautiful wood carvings, the statues only excepted, which are real caricatures, although I have heard frequent mention of the fine sculptures to be found in Quito.\* The high altars and the pillars round the tabernacle are covered with plates of silver; and there are other churches which, though smaller, are no less costly in their adornments. All the saints figure on holidays in superb dresses; and the costume of the Virgin Mary on Holy Thursday is said to be worth

\* I visited several of the ateliers, and found everywhere the same frightful wooden figures as in the churches.

200,000 dollars as she wears a rosary entirely consisting of large fine pearls.

The hospitals for the sick, insane, and leprous I found beneath criticism; and I could not help thinking that, if a little of what the finery in the churches cost had been spent on these institutions, it would have been rather more pleasing in the sight of God. I took some scent with me when I visited them; but I could have used a whole bottle of eau-de-Cologne in each, for the air was almost intolerable, and the pestilential smell was enough to make the healthiest persons sick. The wards are merely long, narrow passages, with niches in which the poor patients lie on oxhides stretched over wooden tressels, but without pillow or covering; the filth was indescribable; the air, as I have said, poison; and each of the wards had only one small window at each end, and even these were fast closed.

In the hospital for the insane, one department of which is devoted to lepers, the madmen are left to run about, quite at liberty, in a courtyard open to the street, but the leprous sick are locked in. What is no less strange than horrible, however, if a pair of these miserable, diseased beings take a fancy to get married, they are allowed to do so; and in this abode of wretchedness weddings are of no unfre-

quent occurrence. Happily for posterity, marriages of this sort never, I am told, produce any children.

I saw no medicine given to any of the patients either in this or any other hospital; and, though there is an apothecary's shop attached to it, Heaven help those who have to take any of the beverages therein concocted. The people in charge of it have never the least idea where to find anything, and have no labels on the bottles to distinguish one drug from another. I happened to want some spirits of turpentine to preserve my insects in, and some flour of mustard for myself; for, perhaps in consequence of the keen air of the mountains and the other hardships of the journey, my chest was very painfully affected for a fortnight after my arrival, and I was so weak that I could hardly drag myself about. The apothecary, however, could find neither the one nor the other for a long time, and had to sniff at some dozens of bottles in search of the turpentine, having only the smell to guide him. The mustard we thought was not to be found at all; but, to reward our patient and persevering search, it was at last discovered wrapped up in a cloth. The prices at this shop were, nevertheless, about ten times what the same articles would cost in Germany; so high, indeed, that the poor can never think of getting any medicine at all

(though possibly that may be all the better for them), but are obliged to have recourse to such domestic remedies as they are acquainted with. The college is not large, but sufficient for the number of pupils; and, as it contained I was told a museum, of which I had also heard mention at Guayaquil, I went to see it. To my no small astonishment, however, when I asked to see it, I was led into a perfectly empty room, which it appears was destined for a museum, if ever there should be one in Quito, and has had the name bestowed upon it in anticipation. A single mummy is shown to visitors, but its repose is seldom disturbed.

To get a general view of the city and environs it is advisable to ascend the not very high mountain Panicillo, whence you can look over the entire plateau, with the ranges of mountains by which it is bounded, as well as many isolated groups, though none of them have very remarkable or picturesque forms. No river is to be seen, and the whole region appears to be very poor in water. A single little brook, falling from the Pinchincha into a ravine, has to provide all Quito with what is required for drinking and washing; and morning and evening it is turned into open channels or gutters that run through the streets, and serve thus to wash away



some portion of the accumulated filth. On the Panicillo there are to be seen the remains of a fortress that was built under the Spanish government; and near this mountain is the considerably higher one, the Pinchincha, an ancient volcano, but extinct apparently these many hundred years.

Two days before I left Quito, however, a chasm opened in its side—the side, moreover, next the town,—from which a little smoke arose; and it may be imagined what uneasiness this occasioned among the inhabitants. I could never learn whether, after I left the place, the subterranean forces made any further manifestation of their power.

Living is very cheap in Quito, and yet there are not here, more than in Peru, Chili, or New Granada, any copper coins.

The medio, or quarter dollar, may be considered virtually the smallest coin; for, though there is one called a quartillo, which is half the medio, it is so scarce, that you scarcely ever get to see it. It is very common to give bread or eggs for small change, and nobody ever refuses to take these articles in place of money.

Houses completely furnished, with looking-glasses, carpets, lamps, &c., may be hired in Quito; and a very good one, with nine or ten rooms, may be had

for fifty dollars a month; a very low price indeed, when the expense is considered which must be incurred in transporting these things across the Cordilleras; for, though there are plenty of sculptors in Quito, there is nobody capable of making an ordinary chair or table.

Servants also are cheap enough. You may get a cook for six dollars a month, and a less qualified man or maid-servant for three; of course with their food. The usual plan of housekeeping is to allow the cook a certain sum to provide everything for the family. Where it consists only of a married pair, one child, and a few servants, he receives only one dollar a day; and for this he provides two abundant meals: in the morning, soup made of meat, preparations of maize, and yams, as well as two dishes of meat, with potatoes, eggs, bread, butter, milk, &c.; for the second meal, fowls, soup with rice, three kinds of meat, with potatoes and bread; and in the evening some sweet dish, with bread and milk to the tea. This, it will be owned, is pretty well for a dollar worth only eighty cents.

I happened to be at Quito during Passion Week, and had, therefore, an opportunity of being present at some of the most important religious festivals of the year.

The first solemn procession took place on Palm

Sunday; it was to the Cathedral, and represented the entrance of the Saviour into Jerusalem. It was opened by a body of the clergy; then followed the President, his staff officers, and all the official authorities; and after them came a wooden figure of Christ as large as life, bound upon an ass, which entered with the procession into the church. It was certainly the first time I had ever seen a creature professedly of this species allowed to enter the sacred edifice; but in many places it is not uncommon to see dogs in churches, so I do not know why one should be shocked at seeing an ass.

On Monday the Indian procession was to take place; for, though all the inhabitants of the republic of Ecuador profess alike the Catholic religion, the old Spaniards will by no means allow themselves to be placed on the same footing with the Indians, and accordingly the latter have a procession to themselves. This sounds deplorable enough, and yet the spirit is the same which induces people in English churches to keep special reserved seats; and woe to the poor man or woman who should presume to take possession of one of these aristocratic places.

In the churches of Peru there is at least no distinction between rich and poor when people are once in the church; and if the slave finds a place empty

by the side of his master, he may sit down in it. There are, however, few benches for any one to sit on, for it is customary to take with you little carpets, on which you kneel.

The Indian procession did not take place after all when I was there, for it appeared it had been forbidden by the bishop on account of the extraordinary manner in which it had been got up in preceding years, and the whimsical absurdity of the costumes adopted, which made the whole affair more like a masquerade than a religious ceremony.

The grandest procession took place in the afternoon of Holy Thursday. It was opened by troops of military, and at various points were introduced figures as large as life forming a sort of scenic representation of various incidents in the life and sufferings of Jesus. In the whole I counted no less than six of these scenes. In one appeared Christ on the Mount of Olives, with angels bringing him the cup to drink, and the disciples asleep in the background; in another he was bearing his cross; in a third being scourged, &c.; and the grief of the Virgin was represented by three daggers sticking in her heart, though she wore nevertheless a long velvet robe with a quantity of jewels, and the above-mentioned costly rosary of large pearls. The figures in these scenes

were completely dressed, even to their wigs, and stood on a sort of stage borne on many poles by Indians, somewhat to my astonishment; for, as the Indians are not deemed worthy to join in the procession with the old Spaniards, it does seem surprising that they should be allowed to bear the image of the Saviour.

The rear of the procession was brought up by the canons of the Cathedral in black robes with trains twelve feet long, which swept the ground; and behind each train walked four boys, who had nothing else to do than to see that it remained spread out in properly majestic style.

I cannot say I felt myself much edified by the contemplation of this procession; on the contrary, it struck me as a mere theatrical amusement.

In the evening of Good Friday the churches were dazzlingly illuminated with hundreds of wax candles, and on this occasion also there were represented scenes from the life of Jesus, such as the Last Supper, the Miracle of the Loaves and Fishes, &c.; representations that were productive of somewhat painfully discordant feelings, for the subjects suggested were of too serious and solemn a kind for laughter, and yet the style in which they were treated was scarcely calculated to awaken any other feeling.

It would be impossible to describe the ludicrous effect occasionally produced by the jumble of costumes of ancient and modern times, and the odd attitudes and expression of the puppets; for instance, in the scene where Jesus "suffers little children to come unto him." The latter were enveloped in cloaks like banditti, and with little straw caps on their heads; and in the Marriage of Cana the figures of the bride and bridegroom threatened every moment to topple over. But the whole thing was too shocking to laugh at; if this is the style in which Catholicism is treated, one can but pity the poor people who are subject to its sway; every moral and religious idea is lost sight of, and the most disgraceful methods are employed by the clergy to raise the sums required for the expenses of the numerous churches and the trappings of their state. They cannot be surprised if some day the eyes of their flocks should be opened, and the most enlightened among them go over to the Protestants, while the Indians fall back into their primitive heathenism. But these priests are men who find no warnings in history, and will bend the bow till it breaks. Why does not the Pope send some more worthy of their sacred calling, who might put an end to the scandalous doings going on in this country, where I have been assured, on the

best authority, there is not among dozens of priests, a single honest man to be found? It is not surprising, if such is the character of their teachers, that the people should be in general worthless and depraved.

The clergy, indeed, lay the blame of this upon the Government; and undoubtedly the two go hand in hand. These countries are much too demoralised and stand on too low a grade of civilisation for a republic, which requires a people at once thoughtful and inspired by true patriotism. Here covetousness and selfishness are the only springs of action in public affairs. The higher class is only eager for place, the lower for plunder; and neither one nor the other ever thinks for a moment of the public welfare. Any other form of government, even a despotic one, would be better than this caricature of republican institutions. I am myself too old to hope to see any important improvement in these regions; but the best thing I can expect for them is to be swallowed up by the American United States, which have already made a beginning with Mexico. In California indeed I saw much that was bad, but these offences were mostly those of private individuals, such as might occur under any government, and especially in a country where the gold fever was

raging, and which was consequently overrun by adventurers from every part of the world.

In Ecuador the lot of the Indians,—of those who are really the legitimate possessors of the soil, is peculiarly melancholy. It might be supposed that this State was in advance of others, since, as I have already mentioned, during my stay in Guayaquil, slavery was entirely abolished; and the phrase “perfect freedom” doubtless sounds very well, but to the Indians there it is a mere empty word. Their situation is worse than slavery; for they have not one, but many masters, and yet no one of whom is bound to feed and clothe them, and the only advantage they obtain from what is called their emancipation is, that they must provide for their own wants. Every male Indian also must pay a poll-tax of three dollars a year, beginning when he is seventeen years old, and continuing till he is fifty; a tax from which the old Spaniards, whether peasants or not, are entirely free. A money-tax even of this amount is extremely oppressive on those who have no property at all, and in a country whose position, surrounded as it is by high mountains, and with roads all but impassable, renders it excessively difficult to earn any in the way of trade.

The Ecuadorians maintain indeed that, with the



exception of this tax, the Indians possess the same rights as the rest of the community, as they are capable of holding land, that is to say, if they can get it; but why should they desire to have land that they have no means of cultivating, and when they cannot maintain themselves to the next harvest? Their usual plan is to hire themselves out as labourers to the owners of the haciendas, who give them a small piece of ground, as well as what is needful for its culture, and then pay their tax—keeping of course a strict account—in returns for their services. The Indians generally get also provisions, clothing, and brandy from their master, frequently in advance, so that they are never out of his debt, and cannot leave him, otherwise there is nothing to prevent their doing so; but it must be added that, if they die, their debt dies with them, as the master has no claim on the family.

The Indians are exempt from military service; but they are obliged when troops are on the march to carry provisions and baggage on their backs without receiving any compensation but abuse and blows. If one of these free Indians chances to pass by a barrack in which the service of some labourer is at the moment required, a soldier will rush out, and snatch his straw hat from his head, as a sign that he

is wanted. If he does not obey willingly, he is soon compelled to do so by violence; a brutal outrage so common, that I myself witnessed it several times during my short stay in Quito. If an Indian comes down for the first time from the mountains, any one who meets him may compel him to come for a certain period into his service; for which indeed the Indian is ostensibly paid, but what the payment is likely to be in such a case may be imagined. I saw in a house where I went an Indian and his wife serving for a dollar a month *without food* or clothing. These poor creatures reminded me exactly of the Pariahs of Hindostan; they eat everything that is thrown away by the rest of the household, for instance, the outside leaves of cabbages and the refuse of the herbs; these they boil up with a little barley-meal, and eat it so without even the addition of salt. They sleep on the bare ground in a corner of the kitchen, or in the open verandah, scarcely half-covered by their ragged ponchos. They are despised not only by the old Spaniards, but by the mere mongrel races; and even the negroes consider the Indians as far beneath themselves, and treat them accordingly; yet they are actually the best and most upright of the inhabitants of the country.

It happened during my stay at Quito that a

theatrical representation was announced to take place in the town; a very rare occurrence, for it is seldom that a company of actors can be induced to cross the Cordilleras. I, for my part, was mightily pleased, and thought I should at least find a troop equal to the itinerant village-actors in my own country.

The museum was to be the theatre; wooden benches were placed in it, chairs in the galleries, and candles—tallow candles, alas!—which did not greatly improve people's dresses.

At the entrance of the room, where the tickets were to be taken, a sentinel was parading, who, planting his weapon before the entrance as the people came up, called out "*A donde va!*" (Where are you going?) in such a thundering voice, that one involuntarily gave a jump backwards. The proper thing, however, was to answer "To the theatre," and then you were allowed to pass on. At the actual entrance to the theatre, however, stood a second soldier, armed like the former, who also planted his musket before us, and uttered the same martial cry. I never saw such an absurdity in any other place. The company was exceedingly republican in its aspect. There were Indians with their wives and babies; negroes, who did not exactly

diffuse perfume around them ; street boys, who quarrelled and fought among themselves for the places ; and amongst these officers and gentlemen with their wives and daughters,—the former wrapped in their ponchos, the latter with the customary large shawl thrown over the head. In the midst of all these there was one party of ladies and gentlemen as full dressed as if they had been going to the opera in London or Paris ; the ladies with low dresses—*very low*, — and laden with jewels, feathers, and flowers ; the gentlemen in black dress-coats and white kid gloves ; and very odd they looked amongst this very mixed and exceedingly dirty company.

To my great disappointment, it turned out not to be a dramatic piece at all that we were to see, but only a conjuring performance, and that so poor in its way, that every child might have done as much. There was really no illusion at all. But the audience was content, and applauded with all its might, and even, in its enthusiasm, rose up and stood on the benches. In one of the tricks a pistol was fired, and then all the babies set up a squall simultaneously, so that the great conjuror had to stop his performance till the mothers could manage to appease their respective progeny and hush them to sleep again.

After the first act was over I left the house, for I really could not bear it any longer. The only pleasure I had in the affair was in seeing the negroes and Indians freely admitted with the rest of the audience. When they had once paid for their places they enjoyed equal rights, even with that highly-decorated party above-mentioned. What puzzled me was where in the world these poor beggarly-looking creatures and street boys could get the money to pay their admission; for the first places were half, and the *sécond* a quarter of a dollar, which, for Quito, was by no means a low price.

Before my departure I visited the hacienda of General Algierro; in almost every respect a splendid exception to all I have seen in Ecuador. It is the handsomest house in the country, and the most perfect order and cleanliness reigns throughout it and the estate. The eldest son, Mr. Carlos Algierro, received his education partly in Paris, and is not only a very accomplished and elegant young man, but bears (as well as his whole family) a most high and honourable character. In this house I found a selection of the best works of French literature; and the father and son have deserved well of their country by the establishment of a factory where calico is made. They brought the necessary machinery from Belgium, and

above 900 beasts of burden were required for its transport across the mountains from Botegas to *Chillos*, as the hacienda is called ; the larger machines were, nevertheless, carried by men. The cotton is brought from where it is grown, and only leaves the factory as finished calico or cambric. The whole establishment is under the superintendence of a Belgian. Besides this, there is a factory in the country, where the coarse cloth used for the ponchos is made.

*Chillos* lies five miles from Quito, in a fine fertile valley, enclosed by magnificent mountains, and over which the summit of *Cotopaxi* is visible.

The letters given to me in Lima for the President and the high official persons here were not of the smallest use. The chief magistrate of this high and mighty state of 600,000 inhabitants was much too important a person to favour me with an interview, and, though I forwarded to him my introductory letter, he never vouchsafed me the slightest reply. Another great man of this small state to whom I was recommended, a Mr. Larrea, carried his politeness still farther ; for he invited Mr. White and his lady to an evening party while I was their guest, without taking any notice of me. Under these circumstances I could not of course think of carrying into execution my plan of a journey to the

Amazon River, for without the efficient support of the government (I do not mean pecuniary support, but the providing trustworthy guides) I could not possibly undertake it. The wild Indian tribes through whose lands I should have had to pass, give travellers neither boats nor guides willingly, and everything has to be taken by force. If you cannot do this you must make your own boats, and either bring your food with you or shoot it as you go. To my great vexation I had to renounce all hopes of this journey; and determined therefore to go to Bogota, the capital of New Granada. The way to it lying through the Cordilleras, was said to be superb in summer, but in the rainy season, terrible. I resolved to go, nevertheless; for to wait for the fine weather would have detained me too long, as that does not in these regions set in till June, and it was now only April.

I made a bargain therefore for a saddle with Mr. White's cook; and on this occasion I had again reason to observe the tendency to fraud and trickery that characterises this people. I could not at first see the saddle, as it was in another house; but the seller asked three dollars for it in the presence of two gentlemen, and I agreed to pay him this price, provided that, when produced, it should appear worth it.

When he brought it, however, and I handed him the three dollars, he pushed them back, saying he had agreed for four. These, and many other such attempts at fraud, with which I will not weary the reader, made me most heartily desirous of getting out of the limits of the South American republics.

The severest toils and hardships are never sufficient to spoil my enjoyment of a journey; but to have to do with people of this sort is beyond my patience. I was incomparably more comfortable among the cannibals of Sumatra than amongst the *soi-disant* Christian rabble. Alas! that I should so often have to declare that some of the worst people I have ever met with have been called Christians.

I had hired the mules for my journey to Bogota, and I then went to the Spanish minister M. de Paz to take my leave. But this gentleman exerted his utmost eloquence to dissuade me from the undertaking. He told me that, although the distance was only 250 leagues (that is, 750 English miles), it could not be travelled at the present season in less than fifty days; that I should have the greatest difficulty in getting across some of the rivers; and that as a woman I should be exposed to the most scandalous extortions and ill-treatment from the people of the country; since at that distance the government could do little or nothing to protect me, for no



respect was paid to its mandates. I could not but listen to his representations, and my desire of getting out of these countries in as short a time as possible coming in aid of them, I altered my plan, and made up my mind to go back to Guayaquil; and I must acknowledge that I believe M. de Paz, by persuading me to renounce my first intention, saved my life. My health had suffered severely from the repeated attacks of the Sumatra fever, and I scarcely think I could at this time have borne up under fifty days of unintermitted toil and hardship with constant rain and perpetual change of climate.

On the third of April I left Quito, and in the company of a single arriero, for I had made a vow to engage no more servants for myself. The journey proved a very favourable one, and I had the good fortune to see the Chimborazo three times in all its beauty; first, on my arrival at Ambato; then on leaving it; and then on the passage across the mountain itself. The sun himself seemed enraptured with this glorious work of God, and, pouring over it the full splendour of his beams, displayed the virgin snows of its summit in the most dazzling robe of light! I felt really entranced in gazing upon it; but the sublime spectacle was, unfortunately, of short duration, for clouds and mists again gathered around it,

and hid this sanctuary of the Cordilleras with their impenetrable veil.

I remarked that the Chimborazo does not terminate in a peak, but has one great dome or cupola, and three smaller ones, and that between these and the great one there extends a considerable surface, sloping from west to east.

The most striking view of the mountain is from Ambato, which lies much lower than Guaranda, and whence it really seems to pierce the very heavens, rising into them in a wonderfully symmetrical, rounded form.

The enjoyment I derived from the contemplation of this magnificent mountain had made me unmindful of toil or danger; but when, just as we reached that small plateau where the Englishman, travelling like me with a single arriero, had been murdered, and the whole region became covered with clouds, I awoke to a sudden consciousness of the desolation of the solitude through which I was journeying. But this day, the fourth from Quito, concluded, like all the rest, in perfect safety, and we reached Guaranda without the slightest accident.

Here I came upon a scene that was new to me. It was Sunday, and the people were entertaining themselves with a bull-fight, which, however, was

just as silly and deplorable of its kind as the conjuring performance I had seen in Quito. A rope was fastened round the horns of the animal, and held by many men at each side, so that it could not move a step further, right or left, than they chose to let it. They then threw various coloured handkerchiefs and other articles at the bull to irritate him, but without success; the creature merely gazed at the assembled crowd and remained perfectly quiet. At last they flung a noose round his neck, and tied his feet together; and when the victim was thus fettered, boys and men rushed at him and tormented him in all sorts of ways, while many who were even on horseback galloped round him as if in triumph. It would be hard to imagine anything more contemptibly stupid and at the same time more disgustingly cruel. What would the mild and merciful Hindoos have said to such a spectacle!

This precious sport lasted several hours,—the men displaying all the while their astonishing bravery in going up to and defying the poor animal, who could not touch them, until at last darkness put an end to the ennobling diversion. It would seem that in other points, too, the morals of the place are not exemplary.

I had to remain a day in Guaranda to get some

fresh mules; and I now understood enough of the Spanish language to make out what was passing around me;—and such things as I did hear!—the women, to my astonishment, discussing, in the presence not only of their husbands and children, but of strange young men, matters that with us would scarcely be spoken of between one woman and another. Some of the gentlemen, too, were so free and easy as to pull off their travelling trowsers without the slightest hesitation before the whole company, which, though they had others underneath, was not quite agreeable.

In Guaranda I met with an Italian, whom I begged to make a bargain for me about the mules, and to stipulate expressly that the journey was to occupy four days. When the rainy season is passing away, as it was then, it can indeed be done in three; but I knew we should pass through many woods and groves that were abundantly peopled with insects and butterflies, from which I promised myself many prizes; and in order to have more time I agreed to pay more than the customary price for the mules. The owner demanded to have the payment in advance, but I wished to give him only the half, in order to retain some check on the arriero. My Italian acquaintance, however, assured me that I ran no

risk, and said I might as well pay at once, which advice I unfortunately followed. But hardly had we gone a day's journey from Guaranda than the arriero informed me that I must make three days do, as his master had given him orders to that effect. In vain did I appeal to the assurance the Italian had given me, to the larger amount I had paid; the money was out of my hands, and, as the arriero informed me, his master had given my treacherous adviser, the Italian, a bribe to persuade me to pay in advance.

The road from Guaranda to Savanetto was still more dangerous than when I had come, as we had now to make a rapid descent. The animals slipped and stumbled at almost every step, and continually fell into holes, of which the road was full. Just as I was on a very steep declivity, down went my mule into one of these; and my saddle-girth breaking at the same moment, I was flung, saddle and all, right over his head. My amiable companion the arriero burst out laughing, and appeared to enjoy it amazingly, and fortunately I suffered no serious damage.

My greatest peril, however, was on the river Guaya. From Savonetto to Guayaquil,—a three days' journey,—I had to go in a small boat; and during the voyage, happening to step incautiously

on the side, I slipped and fell into the river, which, by the by, is full of caymans.

I was not excessively terrified, as, though I cannot swim, I thought it likely the boatmen could, and did not doubt they would save me. This was my instantaneous thought; and after this I was conscious of rising twice to the surface, so that they must have seen me. The caymans I had forgotten. When I rose the first time, I looked vainly round for help. I could see the boat, and also that no one in it stirred, and then I sank again. Now, indeed, I felt terror, but, luckily, did not lose my senses; and, remembering to have heard that in such a case you ought to put out your hands before you and use them as oars, I did so as far as my strength permitted. I was beyond all human help; but behold! when I rose for the second time, I found myself quite close to the boat, and had only to cling to it. The boatmen contemplated me, indeed, with the most perfect tranquillity, and no one put out so much as a hand or even an oar to help me; but, fortunately, one of the fellow-passengers, an Indian, took compassion on me, and assisted me into the boat; and I was saved.

I must confess I feel, even yet, a cold shiver all over me when I think of this incident. Through all

my travels I seem to have enjoyed the Divine protection, and to have been preserved by it through countless perils; but never did I feel the merciful hand over me so immediately and unmistakably as in this instance. I scarcely know how to express my feelings in words, but I am most profoundly sensible of the great cause I have for thankfulness.

Scarcely was I safe in the boat before two of the boatmen plunged into the water to bathe, and remained a long time swimming about in the water, exactly as if they wanted to show me that they could have helped me if they had liked.

When I mentioned my accident in Guayaquil, and complained of the ill-behaviour of the boatmen, it did not appear to excite any surprise; on the contrary, the wonder seemed rather to be that they should have let me get into the boat again, instead of pushing it away; for it happens here not unfrequently that these fellows push a traveller purposely into the water in order to get possession of his property.

In Guayaquil I received a characteristic parting salute from a noble Ecuadorian. The boat in which I had come from Savonetto belonged to a rich merchant of the name of Alvaro, who was going at the same time to Guayaquil, but in another boat; and, as

in paying the amount of my passage my very small amount of luggage had not been expressly agreed for, this wealthy merchant refused to let it be given up to me till I had paid half a dollar more.

People are eager enough for money in most places, but anything like the mean greediness of these Ecuadorians I certainly never met with elsewhere.

From Guayaquil I returned by the steamer to Panama, and met with a most cordial reception from Dr. Antonieth; and a few days afterwards I crossed the Isthmus to Aspinwall, a short journey of only 117 miles, but, as I have said already, a very expensive one. The railroad was now nearly complete, so that the troublesome passage of the river was avoided, and there remained only a ride of sixteen miles; but this little bit cost fifteen dollars, as the luggage had to be paid for at the rate of fifteen cents a pound.

The fare by the railroad was twelve dollars and a half, but a ticket was immediately offered me gratuitously by the company, which is an American one. In a few months the railroad will be complete, and the difficult though short passage be made in a few hours. In Aspinwall you get a perfectly Californian reception from porters, landlords, &c., and have to pay in the best inns four or five, and in the cheapest two, dollars a day.



This is quite a juvenile little town, having only been in existence about a year and a half. It has a completely North American aspect, and the houses are all of wood, and were brought ready-made from the States, by which plan they came much cheaper than they would otherwise have done, with the immoderately high price of labour here. Wherever the Americans see a chance of a good speculation they are sure to be on the spot immediately; but they are sometimes inclined, as here, to make rather too good a use of the opportunity, and have no mercy upon travellers; in this respect, however, I believe they are pretty much like all other nations, civilised or uncivilised. In the evening of the 31st of May I left Aspinwall by the fine steamer Eldorado, Captain Gray, bound for New Orleans.

## CHAP. VII.

NEW ORLEANS. — PUBLIC BUILDINGS. — HOTELS. — THE FRENCH MARKET-PLACE. — PUBLIC SLAVE AUCTION. — SLAVE DEALERS.—VISIT TO A PLANTATION.—SLAVERY. — INSTANCES OF CRUEL TREATMENT OF SLAVES. — FREE NEGROES AND COLOURED PEOPLE. — INDULGENCE TOWARDS WHITE CRIMINALS.

WE reached the mouth of the mighty River Mississippi, without the slightest accident, in five days. The distance from Aspinwall being 1350 sea-miles, and we had now ninety more up the great stream to New Orleans. The Mississippi rolls its dirty yellow waves for many miles out to sea, and while yet far from the shore we could perceive our approach by the changed colour of the water. This river at its mouth appears boundless as the sea, and even higher up it spreads itself out so far over the low flat land that no sign of it is to be seen but here and there a small sand-bank. By degrees the land comes more and more into sight, and the fisherman ventures to build on it his small wooden cottage. Then come artificial

earthen banks and dykes, which confine the stream within its proper channel; but it gives an uncomfortable feeling to the traveller to see the river six or eight feet above the level of the land, and instead of looking up to the shore, to look down upon it. How easily, it seems, may this vast volume of water burst its bounds and spread devastation over the habitations of the thoughtless settlers. • Soon after the fishermen's cottages come rich grass-lands, then single bushes that by degrees form groups, then small woods, and lastly signs of the industry of man in plantations of sugar and maize, alternating with forest; and as the shores extend, the culture becomes more varied and abundant; and the plantations succeed one another in an unbroken series. The neat houses of the planters, the sugar-mills with their lofty chimnies, the pretty-looking cottages of the slaves, form on the whole an extremely agreeable landscape, which would be far pleasanter than it is, if one did not remember that the greater part of its population (all indeed but the planters) are in bondage. About halfway between the mouth of the Mississippi and New Orleans, we passed Fort Jackson, and towards midnight dropped our anchor before New Orleans, the largest town in the state of Louisiana.

Late as the hour was, most of the passengers hastened ashore, having relations or friends to meet. I had none, and therefore lingered in my cell till the following morning.

On landing I got a little foretaste of republican equality. Among the passengers was a very beautiful girl, about twenty, with a dazzlingly fair skin, and fine black hair, which showed a very slight tendency to curl, just enough to give a sharp observer some suspicion of the purity of her white blood.

Scarcely had she set foot on shore than she was stopped by a police officer, and hurried away to prison, where I was told she would have to wait till her friends came to claim her, and show that she was free.

I had noticed her when we came on board at Aspinwall, as I was struck with her beauty and modest deportment; but she disappeared almost immediately, and did not make her appearance again during the whole voyage. On my inquiring after her, and asking whether she was seasick, as she never came to table, I was asked by an American gentleman, with a scornful air, how I supposed she could presume to sit down with us. "Our ladies," he added, "would have left the table in a body if she had." And the ladies who would have been

guilty of this stupid inhumanity do nothing all Sunday but go to church and read the Bible! Truly, I think they must enter as much into the spirit of it as a parrot does into that of the speeches he utters so fluently.

On the last day of the voyage, when we were getting close to New Orleans, the poor banished girl came several times on deck. I entered into conversation with her, and found her so amiable and accomplished that I can only wish all white girls were her equals in these respects.

The city of New Orleans is built on marshy soil, in many places as much as eight feet below the level of the stream. It has a handsome appearance; being regularly built, with many fine brick houses and streets, as well as handsome squares with pretty gardens; but the streets are with few exceptions very dirty. Along the footways there are certainly little canals or gutters of running water; but they are partly dried up, and partly, as is evident to more senses than one, used as sewers, so that in passing them I was continually obliged to hold my handkerchief to my face. The people of New Orleans are by no means exact as to where they throw filth, and just as often as not find the street most convenient. In rainy weather the streets are often

flooded; so that when we consider the marshy character of the country for miles round, the uncleanness of the town, and the glowing heat of the sun, it does not seem in the least surprising that the place should be frequently visited by yellow fever.

New Orleans counts about 150,000 inhabitants, of which about one-third is American, one-third French, and the remainder made up of Germans and other nations. Under the name "American" is always understood one who is descended from the English, though, as it appears to me, it should belong to the child of any emigrant who has been born in the country, or to no one, for the real "American" is the Indian.

New Orleans is for the commerce of the Southern States what New York is for the Northern. It is considered in commercial importance the third city of the Union; but as a place of exportation it stands first.

The river is covered for miles with shipping, and 800 steamers run between here and the Mississippi and its tributary rivers. Most of these vessels are of as much as 500 or 600 horse power, and have two stories, and beautiful galleries running round them, so that when many of them are lying together you might think you had a town before you. And

yet when I was at New Orleans was far from being the most busy season, which is late in the autumn, when the harvest is over for sugar, cotton, and the other chief articles of export, and they are lying ready to be transported to all the regions of the earth. In the year 1853 there were exported from here 5,000,000 of hundredweights of sugar and 3,250,000 bales of cotton. Lately the planters have begun to speculate in the guano manure, by which they realise a profit of 100% to 150% per cent.; and what a prodigious effect must this have in time upon production!

With the exception of the Mississippi itself, the mightiest stream in the United States, and the world of shipping that extends along its banks, there is not much to see at New Orleans; and the monotonous level of the country round is not broken by so much as a hillock twenty feet high. Amongst the buildings, the hotels, especially that of St. Charles, the Mint, the Bank, the Freemasons' and other lodges, are the most remarkable; and I may mention, also the Charity Hospital and the Catholic Cathedral—all which are of freestone. The latter, which is particularly handsome, is built in the Gothic style, and has two very fine elaborately-wrought iron gates. The interior is neat and simple; but its effect was

marred to me by its having pews and reserved seats like the churches in London.

The St. Charles Hotel is in astonishingly grand style: it has a magnificent portal with a colonnade, and the interior corresponds well with this imposing entrance. The reception-rooms are lofty and stately in their proportions, and fitted up with every luxury. The reading-rooms contain all the newspapers of the world. There is an innumerable throng of attendants, and the table such as could leave nothing for the most fastidious epicure to desire. The charge is three dollars a day; but, considering what is furnished for this, it must be regarded as cheap. But for those who desire to have a sitting-room exclusively to themselves, the charge is enormous,—eight dollars a day for the room only; and, of course, very few incur this charge. An American is always employed the greatest part of the day in his business, and, when he does come home, he loiters a little in the saloon or reading-room, where people are reading, writing, playing, or singing, and children romping quite at their ease, and no one troubling himself at all about what others are doing. At the meals there is equal freedom; nobody is confined to certain hours; breakfast is going on from seven in the morning till ten, luncheon from twelve till two.



During this time people come and go just as they please, and ask for what the bill of fare contains. At dinner there is very little conversation, for the American, as I have said before, considers even dinner as a business, and swallows it so fast that he has no leisure to talk. Besides this, people who do not know each other, and have not been introduced, do not speak, and to do so would be regarded as an impertinence; so that a stranger may live at one of these great hotels, and take daily breakfast, dinner, and supper, in a numerous company, without making one acquaintance or speaking a single word.

The Charity Hospital is very well conducted, apartments, beds, and linen white and clean. Part of the attendance on the sick is performed by the Sisters of Mercy, who are accused of showing rather too much zeal for proselytism at the bedsides of their sick and dying patients. But this is an accusation to which almost every sect is equally liable; they are all too apt to think that salvation can only be found within the limits of their own particular form of faith and practice. Besides this public hospital, there are several private ones, where the patients pay a dollar a day.

The Mint is the finest building in the United States; but even this is to be eclipsed by the Cus-

tom-house, at present in the course of erection, which occupies a whole block.\*

The La Fayette Water-works consist of a large basin, filled from the Mississippi, and from which water is carried into every house; the cost for each family being from six to ten dollars a year, according to the consumption.

The market-places, especially that called the French one, are very handsome and convenient. The halls are large and airy, and divided into avenues devoted to the sale of various articles, meat, vegetables, fish, &c.; also of roasted and otherwise cooked provisions there is no deficiency, and all are displayed in neat and pretty style. Tea, coffee, and chocolate may be had too in the market; and a large cup of any one of these beverages, with three small cakes, costs only five cents; and not only the market people and salesmen, but many other men of business, come here to get their breakfasts. The French market is especially amusing to visit early on Sunday morning, as the negroes and negresses then come streaming in from all the country round, with the produce of their gardens, or the little manufactures

\* The streets in the American towns are formed into regular quadrangles called "blocks."

made by themselves and their families for sale. They are particularly skilful at basket-making.

The slaves you see at this market certainly do not look as if they had so very hard a lot as is generally supposed, and such as doubtless many have; but those I saw were well-dressed, brought abundance of goods for sale, and were excellent customers to the coffee-houses.

During my stay at New Orleans, I several times visited the slave-markets, as well as the place where they are sold by public auction. The principal auctions take place every Saturday, in a magnificent hall that will hold conveniently 500 or 600 persons, and which on the other days of the week is used for auctions of houses, lands, &c. All round the hall are tribunes, three feet high, on which the auctioneer and the poor creature he is to sell take their places; and the slaves are always dressed to as much advantage as possible, and placed so that they can be seen perfectly by all buyers. The auctioneer reads a paper, stating their age, bodily constitution, &c., and setting forth their various virtues and capabilities. He then mentions the price, and the auction begins.

A young mother, with one child in her arms and another at her side, was put up when I was there, at

600 dollars, and the highest bid was 1280, which the seller declined, as too small a price by several hundred dollars. Girls of twelve or thirteen years of age I saw sold for about 600 dollars, and they looked up with cheerful pleased faces at their purchasers, and seemed delighted with their smart clothes. Very likely, poor little creatures, they regarded it as the "proudest day of their lives." To me, however, the scene was too painful a one to look at long, and I left the place.

At the slave-dealers' the slaves were waiting in court-yards for customers: they were well-dressed, and not doing any work; and as I wished to see them, I talked as if I were likely to make a purchase of a cook and a man-servant, and immediately the dealer rang a bell to summon the slaves, and placed them in two rows, the men on one side, and the women and girls on the other, and then began to describe and extol his wares. For a good cook he asked 1200 dollars, and for one that was, as he said, not completely trained, 1100.

These slave-dealers are, inconsistently enough, despised and avoided by every one, so that they are almost excluded from human society. But since the gentleman slaveholder buys and sells slaves as well as the dealer, since he equally lives upon the

labour of these poor creatures, and regards them equally as mere cattle, I am really at a loss to conceive on what ground he can regard the dealer as so much viler than himself. But society is full of these capricious distinctions !

In order to have an opportunity of judging of the condition of slaves on the plantations, I visited several of them, and at one — that of Mr. Cook, near Donaldsville — I made some stay.

I am, of course, like every person with the ordinary feelings of humanity not warped by early prejudice, an enemy to slavery; I regard it as a disgrace to our common nature, and hold that a willing owner of slaves can have no claim to the title of Christian, if indeed he has to that of man. Hating slavery everywhere, I most especially detest it in a republican country, where people value so highly their freedom and equality of rights that they would think themselves justified in shooting any one who should attempt to detract from them, but who yet thus openly set at nought every principle of religion and morality.

It was with these sentiments I went to visit the plantations, and therefore certainly with no disposition to look with particularly favourable eyes on the “peculiar domestic institution,” as it is

called; but I am bound in truth and candour to state, that on those I visited the slaves appeared to be by no means in the unhappy position I had imagined. This was especially remarkable on Mr. Cook's plantation, perhaps because this gentleman and his wife are among the best and most benevolent of the planters; and even their youngest children seem to be imbued with the same kindly spirit. I noticed one of them, a little fellow of six years old, putting by at dinner-time a portion of everything that was given to him; and when I asked him who that was for, he answered, "That's for a little negro girl that plays with us. She is not quite well."

The negro cottages, on this estate stood apart from each other, and contained a large room, in which either a family or two or three unmarried people lived. Their beds were good, and provided with pillows and blankets, and even mosquito-nets, and each had, at least, one table, several stools, and wooden tubs and other vessels. A very large cottage in the middle of the village is used for a nursery, where the young children are taken care of while their mothers are at work; it is under the management of a strong, lively-looking negress.

After a lying-in the mother is allowed full four

weeks to remain at home; and as long as the infant requires the breast, occupation is found for her near her cottage. There is even a hospital for the negroes, consisting of two spacious apartments; and a physician visits it once a week, or every day if necessary.

I went several times without any of the family to the negro village, and always found the people looking very comfortable. Many were sitting before their doors with a famous lump of white bread in their hands, and occasionally hot roast pork. At six in the evening they left off work, and came home merry and laughing to their supper,—an abundant portion of meal prepared with maize flour, which was exceedingly good. When the meal was over, they went from one hut to another, gossiping and joking, and not seeming at all aware that their lot was so miserable a one as it is declared to be.

The house slaves appeared at Mr. Cook's to have very easy places; I never saw that they were scolded, far less punished; yet I certainly took care to keep my eyes open, and I could not help thinking that if slavery were everywhere what it was here, it must be an incomparably better fate than that of many of our workpeople and peasants in Europe. The serfage of Russia is undoubtedly far more severe.

The Russian peasant is the slave of his master, the slave of the government, the slave of every Jack in office, and not unfrequently of the common soldier also. He must give his labour without payment to the owner of the land; he must pay taxes to the government; he must submit to all kinds of ill-treatment, and even blows, from government and military officers; and with all this he must earn his own living; and nobody gives him a garment to wear, though his own should drop off in tatters, nor pays his taxes for him, nor offers him so much as a morsel of bread, if his little bit of ground fails to yield its produce. Of his treatment just as terrible stories might be told as any that can be related of the American slaveholders; and for the services he renders, cuffs and kicks are often his only reward. If his wife or his daughter should attract the attention of his lord, woe be to her and the whole family if she resist his wishes. The Russian serf is bound to the soil on which he is born, and can only leave it by serving in the army twenty-five years; he has to labour in the making of roads and bridges, and in transporting goods and travellers, without receiving any compensation. No legal tribunal can be said to exist for him; for the very person against whom he would usually have to complain would sit as the



judge in his own cause. He has not, like the American slave, a master who, having purchased him at a high price, will at least provide for his physical welfare; and, on the whole, of the two lots, that of the Russian peasant is assuredly the worst.

The government of the United States is, however, unpardonable, for not doing more to ameliorate the condition of the slaves. The laws relating to them are bad and defective; and even these, little as they could do for them, are not put in execution. The Americans say: "The government would have enough to do, if it troubled itself with these things! It cannot turn spy, or do anything that might interfere with the liberty of American citizens." It seems to me, however, that the government does contrive to be informed of infractions of the law in other matters—to know which is the landlord who pours out an unlawful glass of beer on a Sunday, or who is the guest that drinks it, or when the Maine Liquor Law\* is violated; and it might, therefore, if it had a mind, keep a more watchful

\* The Maine Liquor Law—so called because it originated in that State—prohibits all use of spirituous liquors. The States that have adopted this law are called Temperance States.

eye on transgressions of a much more serious character. But perhaps the crime of torturing a human being to death is thought a less heinous one than drinking an irregular glass of beer on a Sunday.

How do the Dutch authorities in India contrive to protect slaves so well? A despotic government can find means to ameliorate the condition of the unfortunate class robbed of the first of human rights; and a free State, with whose principles the very existence of a slave is, in the view of mere common sense, irreconcilable, not only permits and favours slavery, but does not attempt even to soften its character by good laws. In the United States, a slave cannot give evidence in a court of justice, nor, strange to say, even lay a complaint; and a man may lawfully be torn from his wife and children (when they are above thirteen), or children from their parents, and sold separately. What heart-breaking scenes must not this alone give rise to! Would that it were possible to subject the legislators to some similar fate, that they might learn a little mercy! Of hundreds of stories of the ill-treatment of slaves by the whites, I will merely mention two or three from a book published in New York in 1839, and called "American Slavery as it is."

Mr. G——, a tutor in the family of a planter, who had the reputation of being a mild master, writes, in July, 1832, the following anecdote:—“One morning, when breakfast was just over, and grace had been said, one of the children asked for some more syrup or molasses; a female slave in attendance put a portion on its plate, rather larger than usual, but not more than the child had often eaten before. But the master flew into such a violent passion with her that he sprang up, and holding her hands with one of his, he struck her with the other, till he at last sank down exhausted by his exertions; and then, observing that his hand was too weak, pulled off his shoe, and went on striking the poor creature with the heel. At last she began to scream, and tried to protect her head with her elbows; and thereupon the master called another negro, and commanding him to hold her hands, continued the beating with all his might, till the victim sank upon the ground, and Mr. G——, on whom she called for help, thought she must have died. She was able, however, to get up, and, going out, washed the blood off, and came back to continue her attendance, with her head, ears, and eyes so swelled, that no one would have known her. For such a trifle as this, the planter was not called to account at all.

There is another story of a Mr. Benjamin Jacob Harris, a slaveholder of Richmond, in Virginia, who was brought to trial for beating a negro girl of fifteen to death, while his wife made a piece of iron red-hot and burnt her in various parts of the body. The verdict in this case was "Died in consequence of an over-severe chastisement;" but the murderer was acquitted. Some years afterwards this same Harris killed another of his slaves, and was again acquitted, because no one had witnessed the deed but negroes!

A captain in the United States navy, being angry with one of his negro boys, put him on a chair, tied his hands together with a rope, and hung him up to a beam, so high that he could only just touch the chair with his toes. The master then beat the boy in that position till he fainted, and very soon afterwards died. And this cowardly ruffian, too, was acquitted.

In Goochland, in Virginia, a superintendent of an estate tied one of the slaves to a tree, and, after beating him cruelly, put some straw round him and actually burnt him to death. In this case the criminal was not a white, but a coloured man; so, though he was not hung as he deserved to be, he was punished, but, as his victim had been only a slave,

merely with some months' imprisonment. This book contains more than a thousand of such cases; so that one can scarcely help wishing the unfortunate negroes might one day combine and take signal vengeance on their oppressors.

In this book it is stated that a meeting was held by the slaveholders to discuss the question whether it was more profitable to keep slaves well, and so spare the capital expended in their purchase, or to overwork them and to wear them out in seven or eight years. Unfortunately, the vote was in favour of the latter method; and many slaves died in consequence of the immoderate labour to which they were subjected.

The law in South Carolina allows a master to work a slave fourteen hours a day in winter and fifteen in summer, whilst the convicts in the prisons are only obliged to labour on the average nine hours; but most Slave States have no law on this subject, and the planter may work his slaves to death as soon as he likes.

Concerning the instruction of the slaves, the humane white man's law only interferes to forbid it. To teach a slave to read or write is a *punishable offence*; so we see that in this case the law does not object to spying into private affairs.

Every effort is made to keep the negro on the same level of barbarism on which he, or rather his forefathers, stood when brought from Africa.

With respect to religious instruction, the law is silent; and some few of the planters' wives keep Sunday schools for their negroes, and read the Bible to them, besides teaching them to sing psalms and hymns,—leaving them, I suppose, to reconcile for themselves the moral and Christian precepts they hear taught from the book, with those they see put in practice before them—no very easy task! Clergymen also go occasionally into the plantations and preach to the slaves, but must do no more.

One very strange thing is to find that, while the whites of America degrade their negroes to the level of the brute, they are still constantly in the habit of confiding to them the most precious of their possessions, namely, their children. From a negro nurse their infants derive their first nourishment; she watches over their early childhood, and not unfrequently becomes the confidante of the growing girl; for all this the despised race is found perfectly adapted. But must not so close an intercourse with such rude and sensually disposed women as the negresses have a very injurious effect on the minds of the children? Must not the moral sensibility of

the girl or boy suffer greatly from the speech and example of these people? And is not this practice a piece of unaccountable thoughtlessness, an entire forgetfulness of duty on the part of the parents? But they probably think, as they were brought up themselves, so may their children be; and the practice of devolving thus their heaviest cares upon others is too convenient to be abandoned. That there are exceptional cases of parents not thus negligent it is hardly necessary to say.

I am very much inclined to think that the system of slavery, by the consequences it entails, in a great measure avenges itself on the whites themselves. Their children are accustomed to be constantly waited upon; it would be a kind of disgrace so much as to tie a string for themselves, or pick up anything they had let fall. The slave is the hand of the child; and it follows quite as a matter of course that the child becomes imperious, capricious, idle, and frequently malicious; loses all energy for action, almost even for thought, and, alas! too often all kindly feeling also. A boy or girl brought up in the Slave States may be distinguished very disadvantageously from others who have been differently circumstanced; and it is needless to say how powerful through life is the education received in childhood.

The lot of the free negroes and coloured people is scarcely preferable to that of slavery, not even in the Free, much less in the Slave States. Partly by law, and partly from the absurd prejudices of these tolerant Christians, they are excluded from society, and belong to no class—neither to the slaves nor the citizens: They are the pariahs of the United States; and as if to enable them to feel still more deeply the degradation of their position, they are allowed to visit schools and receive education. This is really almost a refinement of cruelty; for by education ambition is awakened, and the free negro becomes acquainted with the rights of men only to know that he is excluded from them. The law does not allow him to become a citizen of any State, nor have a vote at any election; it will not receive him as a witness, nor suffer him to become connected by marriage with any white family. Must not such invidious distinctions and prohibitions have a tendency to embitter the feelings of these people towards the favoured classes? and while it is the first duty of every government, whatever may be its name, to promote morality and good feeling amongst its subjects, it here does so much the reverse, that if a white man who has children by a coloured woman would wish to acknowledge



them and give them the rights of children, he may not do it; and if he wishes to retain the good opinion of his white fellow-citizens, he will not even educate them; should he, however, choose to SELL the children, and the mother with them (no very uncommon occurrence), he may do so without forfeiting, in the esteem of the world, his character as a man of honour.

I often spoke with Americans on this subject, but could never get them to acknowledge that there was anything wrong in it; and they always concluded with saying that if the free negroes did not like their treatment, they might emigrate to Europe, or go back to *their own country*. And where is, then, their country? Is it Africa? where they were not born, where their families do not live, where the people do not speak their language? Surely not. For fifty years no slave has been brought hither from Africa, and all the negroes now in the United States are born Americans, and are merely descended from Africans. America, not Africa, is their country; and in my opinion they have as good a claim to the name of American as the whites, who are descended from European immigrants; what is denominated their native country

they often do not so much as know by name. As for emigrating to Europe, who would give them the means? and what could they do in a quarter of the world already so much overpeopled as to send out every year 100,000 wanderers to all parts of the earth? In America there is still need of hands and heads; and it is to emigration the United States owe, in a great measure, the power and importance they have attained.

There are actually people here who maintain that the system of American slavery is very beneficial in its results to the natives of Africa. The free negroes, they say, are educated, instructed in religion, and then sent to the negro Republic of Liberia on the coast of Africa, where they may convert their countrymen, and perform the office of missionaries.

A wonderfully clever contrivance, no doubt; but what if these envoys should relate to their African converts how they have been treated by Christians in the country from which they have brought their Christianity;—how they have been degraded to the level of beasts of burden, cruelly punished for the smallest offences, worn out with unrequited labour, and sometimes tortured even to death!—how even, when free, they have been despised, refused the commonest rights, hunted out of society, not allowed

so much as to sit down at a table, or take a place in an omnibus, by the side of the lowest vagabond of a white, but shunned as if their touch was contagious! — how far would all this go in inspiring respect and love for the Christian religion? It is almost a pity that there is not some country where we white Christians could enjoy the same benevolent treatment as the negroes in the United States; it would doubtless prove so highly beneficial to our religion.

There have been hitherto thirteen Slave States, Florida, Georgia, Texas, Carolina, Virginia, Kentucky, Tennessee, Alabama, Mississippi, Louisiana, Arkansas, Missouri, and Maryland, as well as a part of Columbia. Perhaps, too, their number may increase, and of course ultimately to the great benefit of Africa!

One of the most striking contrasts that can be imagined to its treatment of negroes and coloured people, may be found in the extreme indulgence of the American Government towards white criminals.

I was three weeks in New Orleans, and during this time few days passed in which either a murder or an incendiary fire did not take place; but these things attract little attention. I remember speaking with the horror and disgust I felt at a murder that

had just taken place, in which a drunken workman had quarrelled with his wife and cut her throat. But I was laughed at for the warmth of my expressions, and told that when I had been here five or six months I should not think so much of such an ordinary matter. A few nights after, indeed, a second case of the kind did occur, and the man after the commission of the deed attempted to hang himself. A murder arising out of a quarrel, or committed in drunkenness or under the influence of jealousy, is seldom severely punished, and drunkenness especially appears to be considered quite as an excuse.

But even where this very excellent apology cannot be offered, if the criminal has money, and knows how to make friends, he can generally get off. There was, for instance, a very disgraceful case of this kind in Kentucky a few months before my arrival, in which the murderer entirely escaped punishment. The case was this: — A boy who attended a certain school was in the habit of doing his work very badly, or not at all, and then excusing himself by obvious falsehoods. The teacher one day, irritated at this behaviour, called the boy a liar. The boy related this, and probably, according to his custom, with the addition of much that was exaggerated

and false, to his father and brother; whereupon the latter, a youth of nineteen or twenty, armed himself with a pistol, gave his brother a large knife, and going to the school-house, after the exchange of a few angry words, shot the master. The father, being a rich man, bought over the jury, and the murderer escaped without the slightest punishment. This case was, however, so very notorious, that the people took the matter up, and expressed their opinion upon it so energetically to both the father and the jury, that the latter had to retire from their offices, and the former to sell his possessions and quit the State; but it is a bad thing when judicial power is thus in the hands of the populace.

Incendiary fires are very frequently the acts of the owners of the building themselves, who first insure it for more than its worth, and then manage to get out of it all the most valuable property; so that they often make a considerable profit of the transaction.

When I made any remarks upon trespasses of this kind, I was told that "America was a young country, and would improve in time." It seems to me, however, that when it was still younger, in the time of the great Washington, many things were better managed than they are now.

A good administration of justice is the first duty

of a state, and of the greatest influence on the morality of the citizens; and the corruption of justice is the ruin of the people.

Wherever men struggle for offices merely with the view of enriching themselves, where everything is to be bought, and where the rich can commit crimes almost with impunity, there surely will patriotism and morality speedily disappear.

At the separation from the parent state America was like a pure and spotless page, while that of Europe was soiled with a thousand stains. What might not have been written upon the former? What might not America have become? — so richly endowed by nature, so free from the numerous evils and abuses that have taken such deep root in the old world, — with no nobility, nor army, nor church to struggle with. But alas! the spotless page has been defiled, and many a blot has fallen on it!

To a stranger entering the United States by New Orleans the impression made can hardly be a very favourable one. Personally, I had every reason to be satisfied, for I received much hospitality and many friendly services from various families resident in this city, especially those of Messrs. Dürmayer and Höffer, with the latter of whom I spent eight days;

but I was most heartily glad nevertheless to get out of it. This, too, is called a city of wonders, and not the least wonderful thing in it is the hearing slave-owners and slave-dealers talking aloud about human freedom and the rights of man.

## CHAP. VIII.

DEPARTURE FROM NEW ORLEANS.—NAPOLEON.—VOYAGE ON THE ARKANSAS.—LITTLE ROCK—COMPANY IN THE STEAMER.—AMERICAN ILL MANNERS.—EMANCIPATED CHILDREN.—FORT SMITH.—THE CHEROKEE INDIANS.—ST. LOUIS.—THE HIGHLANDS.—THE FARMERS.—LAKES PEPIN AND ST. CROIX.

ON the 23rd of June I left New Orleans in the magnificent steamer *Belfast*, which was going up the *Mississippi*; and Captain Taylor, who was also owner of the vessel, when he heard my name, which he said he was well acquainted with through the newspapers, politely declined taking any payment.

The internal arrangements of this steamer were very splendid. Rich carpets covered the floors and enormous looking-glasses the walls; and velvet-covered chairs and sofas and a beautiful piano adorned the saloon. Sleeping-cabins, beds, &c., left nothing to wish on the score of either convenience or luxury; and there were four rich and abundant meals, with pastry, ice, and so forth; yet the price was very reasonable, namely, for the passage from New



Orleans to St. Louis, above 1200 miles, only twenty-five dollars, and the same distance down the stream only twenty. The Americans complained of it, nevertheless, as too high. I was myself only going halfway, as far as the little town of Napoleon, and thence up the Arkansas, which falls into the Mississippi, to Fort Smith.

We stopped at many towns and villages on the way, of which the most considerable was Bâton-Rouge, a place of 30,000 inhabitants, and, although much smaller than New Orleans, regarded as the capital of Louisiana, as it lies more in the centre of the State. The Government House, which is quite a palace, stands on a hill commanding a view of the town, and possesses a fine pillared portico. The town of Vicksburg, lying on a low hill, seems somewhat to exceed Bâton-Rouge in size. In the evening of the 26th of June I reached Napoleon, having now gone 700 miles from the mouth of the Mississippi; and in the whole of this distance I had not seen a single view that could be called agreeable, far less beautiful. The river, certainly a most majestic one, rolls on its mighty course between rich primeval forests; but the perpetual uniformity of the banks becomes excessively wearisome, and it is a kind of journey that one is glad to make in a swift steamer. The

first 100 miles from New Orleans show an uninterrupted series of plantations of sugar, cotton, and maize, stretching over wide plains bounded in the background by forests. The latter are fine and close, but exhibit no giant trunks. Near Bâton-Rouge the ground rises into what may here pass for a hill, an elevation of about fifteen or twenty feet, but it soon sinks again into the dead monotonous flat, until you reach Vicksburg, where there is again a trifling rise. For the planter this is doubtless a fine prospect, as he regards it from quite a different point of view from the traveller, and sees in this boundless extent of land the rich promise of the future harvest. The only striking thing in this country must have been the inhabitants, and they, since the whites have been crowding hither, have entirely disappeared. No wigwam is now found hidden in the dark recesses of the forest; no picturesque Indian, armed with bow and arrow and scalping-knife, starts up suddenly at your side; even the few natives you meet with in the towns have very much the air of exotic plants, and, dressed as they often are in old European clothes, have lost half their peculiar character.

The journey lasted, as I have said, only three days; but during that time we had two melancholy events on board. A man died of the cholera, and a

free negro, who used to wait at table, quarrelled with one of his companions and struck him dead. It appeared that the man who committed the deed had his sleeping-place close to the ship's bell ; and his comrade had, by way of joke, tied his feet to it when he was asleep, and then suddenly shouted in his ear that it was time to lay the cloth. The sleeper awoke and sprang up, thereby of course setting the bell in violent motion, and getting, as might be expected, a very sharp reproof in consequence. Irritated at this, he began to quarrel with his comrade, and, seizing a large stick, struck him several times over the head with it so violently that he split his skull, and the man died two hours afterwards.

The passengers spoke of this occurrence with an air of the most perfect indifference, and boys of nine or ten years old went to look at the dead body, and came back as gaily as possible to tell what they had seen. I knew that human life was held rather lightly in America, but I did not expect to find the feelings of the young people blunted at so early an age as this.

The little town of Napoleon has only quite lately arisen in the forest, and is still entirely surrounded by it. I remained there only one day, and then shipped myself on the little steamer " Thomas P. Roy," for

Little Rock, the chief town of the State of Arkansas, about 300 miles off, — a distance that took us forty-two hours.

On the Arkansas, as well as most of the tributaries of the Mississippi, only very small vessels can be used, as these rivers are in summer very deficient in water, and even the smallest steamers have to cease running for some months.

From the steamer I had left to the one I now entered, the difference was great indeed, for the "Thomas P. Roy" was not only very small, but very disorderly. Here were no separate sleeping-cabins, but the gentlemen slept in one common cabin and the ladies in another. This time, however, there were no ladies but myself and one with two children. But my astonishment may be imagined when in the evening her husband also came into our cabin and took possession of a berth. We had a temperature of 108° Fahr., yet I was obliged to keep the heavy curtains of my berth closely drawn; and in the morning I had to perform the very difficult feat of dressing myself behind them; and having to go thus with all my clothes on to the wash-hand-stand, my ablutions, as may be supposed, were of a very imperfect and unsatisfactory description. The ladies in this part of the world do not appear to be very

fastidious on these points, and I remember that afterwards, when I was travelling on the Ohio, I once saw a young lady call into the ladies' cabin a gentleman (with whom she could not be very closely connected, since she addressed him as Mr. —, and was addressed by him as Miss —), and without ceremony ask him to fasten her dress, though there was a female attendant and plenty of women present who could have rendered this service.

Everything in this boat was on the most parsimonious scale. Only a very little morsel of ice was put into the water at dinner, whilst in the "Belfast" iced water could be had at any hour of the day. The coffee and tea was drunk without milk, though we stopped several times every day, and milk is in this country so cheap that you may have a quart for a cent. For dinner we had on the first day roast fowls and potatoes; but the second only ham and potatoes; and the prices were actually higher than on the splendid Mississippi steamer. Both sides of the Arkansas are clothed with thick woods, which indeed seem still to cover the greater part of the country.

The river itself is so full of trunks of trees sticking up, or what is still more dangerous, only just covered with water, that the greatest caution is

required ; and at night it is only with a bright moonlight and high water that the navigation can be attempted.

Little Rock counts only 3000 inhabitants, and is more like a pretty little forest village than a town, as the houses lie far from one another, in the midst of trees and gardens.

I met here with a surprising musical prodigy, in the person of a child only six years old, Marie Schär, the daughter of German parents. She has only been five months receiving instruction, and already plays quite astonishingly ; and she only needs to hear a melody once or twice to be able to play it. The accordion she managed in a masterly manner, though on that she had had no instruction at all. Unfortunately, in this out-of-the-way place her talents will have little chance of cultivation.

I waited in Little Rock till the 1st of July for the pretty little steamer, "Colonel Drenner," which was going to Fort Smith, 300 miles further. In this boat there was much more order, and very fair entertainment.

The passage up the Arkansas is more agreeable than on the Mississippi ; for, although its rank as a river is far below the former, — in fact, it is so poorly supplied with water that the steamers were

continually getting upon sand-banks, and there was often much trouble in getting them off again, — the eye finds here some enjoyment in the more varied landscape and the rising hills and mountain chains. They do not, indeed, yet reach any considerable height, but they are a great relief after the deadly uniformity of the Mississippi. Here all is, as yet, in the fresh wildness of nature. The primeval forest is still standing, and you see only here and there a small field of Indian corn, and a log-house half hidden among the trees, — a solitary outpost of civilization; but the inhabitants are seldom to be seen.

The hills increase in size; and now comes a group of rocks, when we have gone about seven or eight miles; but no one of them appears to have much claim to the title of “Big Rock,” bestowed on one of them by the Americans, for none exceeds the height of thirty or forty feet. The “Dardanelles”\* are some ten feet higher, and stand in a line like soldiers on each side of the river. The passengers were all enchanted with this picturesque spectacle, and thought there could be “nothing more beautiful

\* The Americans, as is well known, are fond of bestowing the names of the most renowned places, and even persons, of antiquity, on the towns, villages, and natural features of their own country.

in the world." In the background appeared Mount Magasin, 500 feet high, and distinguished by a long, narrow, smooth ridge from all others.

But, though without any very striking features, there is something in the deep solitude of the yet untrdden wilderness, where even the smallest villages are few and far between, and where not even the sound of the falling axe is heard, that is impressive and almost sublime; and the impression is not lessened, perhaps rather heightened, by the contrast of one of the greatest works of human art—the steamer—rushing, foaming through for a moment, and disturbing the solemn silence which, as soon as the sound of its paddle-wheels has ceased, settles down again as death-like as before.

Although the forest was everywhere dense and luxuriant, and the few fields there were bore fine crops, the State of Arkansas is not counted among the fertile regions of America; and it is for this reason that it is, as yet, so little settled. When America shall have suffered the mournful fate of Europe and become over-populated, the stream of emigration may turn this way; but, as yet, there is no need to be sparing with land, and there is more of the richest, finest soil than there are hands to till. The company on the boat did not appear to be of



a very refined or highly intelligent class; and I got amazingly laughed at because, when we stopped to take in wood, I used to go into the forest to catch insects. Very few of the people I met had any notion at all of a museum.

If I had found the company at the hotel somewhat over taciturn, I had certainly no such complaint to make of this; for they gossiped all day long, and asked me endless questions about my family connections,—my religion,—my motives for travelling so much,—and, moreover, where I got the money for my long journeys. They did not confine themselves to talking either, but went into my cabin to look at my collection of insects, and not merely to look at, but to handle and often spoil them. Most troublesome of all were the children, who screamed and roared if their parents did not immediately comply with all their wishes, and do just what they pleased. Unluckily, they sometimes refused at first and afterwards complied, which is, I think, the very worst plan they could have adopted. With children it should be always “Yes” or “No,” and the word once spoken should be maintained. In this way, as a child soon learns that its screaming answers no purpose, and does not help it to what it wants, it soon ceases to scream.

Another fault in American education is, the introducing children too early to the usages and behaviour of grown-up persons. In some countries of Europe the children remain children too long, which is not desirable; but the attempt to ignore childhood altogether is a far worse mistake. Here, the little girl of eight years of age behaves like a grown-up young lady, and the boy of ten declines being treated as a boy any longer. In the Southern States, the girls often marry at twelve; and the same age is considered suitable for the boys' entrance on business. In some of these States the law even sanctions the runaway matches of young ladies who have attained this mature time of life, and who may choose to enter into a matrimonial connection without their parents' consent. The natural consequence of this emancipation of children, even from the most legitimate authority, is that, not merely their intellectual culture is very imperfect, but that the timid modesty, the bloom and freshness of youth, is soon lost among the girls, and that the women are sadly deficient in the tender feminine grace which is the truest ornament of our sex.

In no country in the world, perhaps, are there so many educational institutions, public and private, as in the United States; and yet there are, as far as I

have seen, very few really cultivated and accomplished girls or women; for I scarcely count being able to play a little on the piano and sing a French song as constituting a claim to that title. Their knowledge is for the most part extremely superficial, though they exhibit true republican daring in making the most of it. I felt a cold shiver run over me whenever I saw a piano in the saloon of the steamer, for young and old ladies seated themselves at it without the smallest hesitation, and favoured us with songs in uninterrupted succession the whole day long. Of geography they knew so little, that when they asked me, as hundreds did, what country I came to the United States from, and where I was born, and that I answered I came from Peru, and I was born in Vienna, I found they did not know the position of either; their geographical knowledge seemed confined to Paris and London, some general notion of Germany, and, since the commencement of the Russian war, of St. Petersburg and Constantinople.

In many of the schools in which I attended examinations of the highest classes in geography, the questions did not go beyond the United States, so that one might have thought there was no other country in the world.

At first I was exceedingly surprised at this ignorance, having understood from the parents that the children had begun to attend the schools as early as four years old; but I subsequently got a little more insight into the matter. Very few of the parents are themselves highly cultivated; and they think when they have sent their children to school they have done enough. The mothers of the opulent classes are not brought up to be very domestic in their tastes and habits, but pass the greater part of the day swinging themselves in a rocking-chair, and reading a novel; or they go out shopping, and spend hours in turning over the costly goods. To take the education of their children on themselves would be far too much trouble; they have "no time" for it: and the schools are very lax in their discipline; for if the child were compelled to work more than it liked, and complained of the school, its complaints would be sure to be attended to; and if it expressed a wish to change the school for another, the change would be made accordingly. The teachers are therefore compelled to be very cautious how they offend the small personages, by insisting too much on attention to the studies, for if they did they would soon find their school empty.

After I had become aware of all this, I no longer

wondered at the superficiality of the ladies' knowledge, but, on the contrary, was rather surprised that they were as well informed as I found them.

On reaching Fort Smith, I found that the water was thence too shallow to allow of my travelling by it any further, and I therefore hired a horse, intending to ride to Fort Gibson, in the neighbourhood of which I expected to find the Cherokee Indians; but in the night I was again attacked by my old enemy the Sumatra fever, and was obliged to renounce my project.

The Cherokee Indians are distinguished above all others by their personal advantages and educational progress. They live in towns and villages under a constitutional form of government, have good schools, and even a newspaper; and they frequently send their sons into American commercial houses. Their chief is married to a white girl of respectable family, for a marriage with an Indian is not here considered disgraceful.

I met many of these Cherokees at Fort Smith, whither they come sometimes on business, and sometimes on pleasure, and they used frequently to dine at the hotel where I was staying. They spoke a little English, used knives and forks, and generally behaved themselves with great decorum

—with the exception of sometimes taking a piece out of the dish, and carrying it straight to their mouths.

These men were mostly handsome, both in face and figure; and but for their complexions might have passed for Europeans. Their skins, however, I must own, were not very pretty, being of a dirty-looking brown colour, and very much like leather. Both men and women wore European clothing—a sort of wide, short blouse, with a large collar, handsomely trimmed; and one had a piece of red stuff wreathed round his head, like a garland. The ladies, unluckily, were by no means so good-looking as the gentlemen.

The 4th of July came during my stay at Fort Smith, and with it the celebration of the Declaration of Independence; on which occasion there was a negro-ball, and both slaves and free negroes took part in it.

The costumes were European, of course. The gentlemen were in black, with white neck-cloths and white waistcoats; the ladies in *tulle*, and other pretty white dresses; and there was no lack of gold chains and jewellery, or of ribbons and flowers in the hair. The ball-room was well lit and decorated, the refreshments abundant; but the European toilettes,

with the black and variously-coloured faces, gave to the whole scene a somewhat comic effect.

As soon as I was sufficiently recovered from the fever, I returned to Napolcon by another handsome steamer, the "Crescent-City," the captain of which also declined taking any payment from me.

The shores of the Mississippi, as we proceeded farther up, still preserved their monotonous character;—thick, boundless forests, covered the plain, and no glimpse appeared of any more varied scenery—not even of considerable plantations,—nothing but here and there a wretched-looking hut, with a pile of wood ready for the passing steamer.

Above the town of Memphis, the banks of the river rose abruptly about fifty feet; and this is considered, consequently, the finest scene on the river. Our worthy Captain John called me up on purpose to admire it, and there was no end of the raptures of the passengers. But after a few hundred yards, as if nature was quite exhausted by such an effort at the picturesque, she fell back into her former dismal uniformity.

At Teddo, 300 miles from St. Louis, and consequently 1000 from the mouth of the river, you first get something like a fine view. There is a large handsome Catholic college here, and a Catholic

church, in the Gothic style, as well as some imposing looking brick houses. The river is here divided by some pretty islands into several branches, forming bays, and what looks like a lake, while in the background appear ranges of hills; so that people who have never seen any other country than the dreary regions on the lower part of the river, are much struck by it; but it will not bear any comparison, for instance, with the scenery of the Danube.

At the town of Cairo, 280 miles below St. Louis, the Mississippi receives the waters of the Ohio, distinguishable for a long way by their pure green colour. After a struggle the waters begin to mingle, —single waves of the muddy Mississippi trouble the purity of the Ohio,—they become more and more frequent, and at length the bright pure water entirely disappears in the murkier fluid; just as we often see in life the evil principle gain, for a time at least, the upper hand of the good.

The small town of Cairo lies on a tongue of land between the two rivers. It resembles a great many other of the American towns, which mostly exhibit marks of the haste with which they have been constructed. They consist of scattered wooden houses, in which a few small rooms are formed by thin partitions, that can keep out neither the cold of winter



nor the heat of summer; both of which, as it is well known, reach greater extremes in the United States than in other countries of similar latitude.

The American takes a fancy to settle here or there, sets to work and builds rapidly what is absolutely necessary; and should his wants increase he builds more. But it often happens that the place does not correspond with his hopes and expectations, or some other idea has presented itself to his speculative mind, in which case he abruptly leaves the settlement, even when he has been doing very well, in order to follow up his new project, and plant himself somewhere else. The Americans call this "going-ahead," or keeping moving; and I myself met, in the steamer, several of these "moving" families, who confessed to me that they were leaving their homes for no other reason than because they had lived in them for some years.

On the 14th of July we reached the town of St. Louis, which had been visible for some hours before, as the river in this part makes many windings; but there was nothing very attractive in the dull mass of houses that lay along the banks, and extended over a slight elevation. The large American towns have fine buildings, many churches, &c.; but these are only seen when you go through the streets.

There are seldom any majestic domes or lofty towers to greet you from afar. The country round St. Louis is flat and sandy, and the woods lie several miles off.

I stopped at the house of Mr. Charles Boire, a judge, with whom I had become acquainted at New Orleans, and who, hearing I was going to St. Louis, had had the kindness to invite me to his house.

The town of St. Louis had, when I visited it, no less a population than 120,000, although fifteen years ago it did not count nearly a tenth of that number. As usual, the hotels, the bank, and the custom-house are the most remarkable buildings, but there are also some private ones well worth notice, for instance, a house in "4th Street," which is built entirely of white marble found in the neighbourhood of the town; and the Catholic church, though simple, is extremely pretty. My first walk was to this church; my inducement thereto being the following description which I had read in the St. Louis Directory for the year:—

"The Cathedral at St. Louis is unrivalled in the United States for the elegance and costly magnificence of its sacred vessels, its pictures, and decorations; and few churches in Europe are in possession of similar treasures. There are pictures by Rubens,

Raphael, Guido, Paul Veronese, and many others by the first masters of the Italian school.”

From this description I was led to hope for the enjoyment of a fine picture-gallery, as well as of other precious works of art; but, to my infinite astonishment, I found that these treasures existed almost solely in the imagination of the writer. There were no works of art, but four oil pictures, and of these only one that could possibly be ascribed to any of the old masters. It is common enough to find exaggeration and colouring in the statements of travellers, but such a piece of downright falsehood as this I had not before met with.

The prison is built of massive stone; the interior consisting of a great hall with two stories of cells, each adapted for two persons, but without any kind of furniture but an ox-hide to supply the place of a bedstead. The prisoners before trial may, as far as their purses permit, procure themselves every indulgence, but after conviction this is no longer allowed. This at least is the letter of the law; but I myself saw the convicts in possession of more comforts than the other class, for the golden key is as powerful in these free countries as anywhere else in the world.

The prison diet would not have been bad if the mode of preparation had been a little better; but it

was both unhealthy and wanting in cleanliness, and the people were fed quite like dogs. There was one great tub into which all sorts of food were thrown together; and when this was brought into the hall, a disgustingly dirty negro took out, sometimes with a ladle, sometimes even with his hands, a certain portion, threw it into a pan, and pushed this through a little opening in the cell doors. The air in the hall was very impure, and in the cells almost unbearable. Executions take place always in the courtyard of the prison.

There are many institutions of a charitable kind, such as for forsaken children, for poor old people, and for the reformation of women of bad character, &c. ; all of which appeared to me admirably managed; the establishment for the poor especially, for whom much is done in the United States. Many societies of the kind are formed by the ladies only, who superintend and provide for them in a very effectual manner; and in this respect the ladies of America deserve the most cordial praise.

The sugar refinery of the Messrs. Belcher is extremely well worth seeing, and is the largest in the western country. More than six hundred tons of molasses are made into refined sugar every week; and in this operation 700 men are employed, and

140 horses and mules. I saw here one of the deepest Artesian wells that have, I believe, ever been made; it has already reached a depth of 2200 feet, and the boring is still going on; for though there is already an abundant supply of water, it is so impregnated with sulphur that it cannot be used. The market-hall of St. Louis is handsome, but not equal to that of New Orleans.

*Belle Fontaine*, as it is called, is one of the prettiest cemeteries that I have ever seen; consisting of a magnificent natural park of many hundred acres of land, in which art has had nothing more to do than to clear away the underwood and cut down a few of the trees. In this ground only places for family graves are sold, and these at a pretty high price. Each is adorned with flowers, and surrounded by a light elegant iron railing; and in the centre stands a handsome marble monument, often of Italian workmanship. As yet, however, there are very few of these places filled. The whole park is intersected by beautiful paths for walking and driving, and it certainly would not be easy to find a more charming walk. I only regretted that there were no seats, so that one might take a book and linger there a much longer time.

I remained some weeks in the house of Mr Boice,

and during the whole time was very attentive to the treatment of the servants, who were all slaves, and to my great joy I found that they were treated as if they belonged to the family — well clothed, well fed, and with even, as it appeared to me, too little work; for half a dozen slaves certainly had not as much as would have been done among us by two servants. Mr. and Mrs. Boice, it is true, are among the most excellent people in existence, and their children uncommonly well brought up. Could such masters as these be secured for slaves, their lot would doubtless be happy enough.

I made a little excursion from St. Louis to a town called Highland, thirty-two miles off, and situated on the other side of the Mississippi, in the State of Illinois. For this purpose I had to take a place in the stage coach, — certainly no very agreeable mode of travelling here; for the Americans, who are commonly so careful, almost covetous of their time, manifest with these machines a really heavenly patience. The passengers do not, for instance, collect at any common starting-point, but the coach drives about to the respective houses to pick up passengers, — a plan that in a large town, of course, occasions a dreadful loss of time, — as you go driving here and there, sometimes for two

or three hours, before the actual journey begins. Just as much time is lost over the changing horses. They are never ready; and the gentlemen go into the inn or liquor-shop and pass half an hour there at each stage. The horses are also watered on the road.

The little town of Highland is about fifteen years old, and contains 5000 Germans and Swiss, by whom it has been founded. Before this, the country round was entirely prairie; but now it is covered with luxuriant wheat, oats, and maize fields. I was received here in a very complimentary manner.\*— A Mr. Bernais, who had formerly been attached to the French Embassy in Vienna, was waiting for me at the station, to conduct me to his house; and in the evening I had a serenade from the Musical Society of the place; and the cordial feeling manifested towards me, — the German language that I heard on all sides, — the German songs and musical compositions performed for my entertainment, and really in an admirable manner, — all this made me fairly forget in what a strange and distant part of

\* I hope I shall be pardoned for mentioning little particulars of this kind. I do so for the sake of making my acknowledgments for the kindness I have received, in the course of my travels, from people of all nations.

the world I was. I seemed to have been somehow conjured back into a place in Germany.

Five or six miles beyond Highland, the prairies are still in a state of nature. I went to visit them, and found them very different from my previous conception, formed only on description. I had imagined an immeasurable level surface, covered with grass six or seven feet high, and the passage through which was extremely difficult. I found, however, on reaching the prairie, that the land was of an undulating form, and, though thickly covered with grass, herbs, and weeds, these nowhere exceeded the height of two or three feet; and it was perfectly possible to walk, or even drive, all over the prairie. The prospect from one of the hillocks of twenty or thirty feet high was charming. I could never have imagined that a landscape without river, mountain, or lake, could have been half so beautiful. The waving outline afforded the eye the advantage of a distant prospect and of perpetual variety. On some of the slopes lay pretty farm-houses, in the midst of blooming plantations; and in the foreground the little town, shaded by groves of fruit and other trees; and in the far distance appeared the dark forest to frame in the picture.

On the great estates of Mr. Kopfli an experiment



was made, a few years ago, of planting vines, and they succeeded admirably; but it was found that the expense of making the wine was so great, that it could be had cheaper from abroad, and the matter was therefore given up for the present.

I visited several of the farms, as I much wished to become acquainted with the mode of life of the class of farmers in America; and I certainly became convinced that, for any one who possesses property sufficient to buy land, build himself a house, and cover the expenses of the first year, there is here the finest prospect opened. Land, in the districts still unsettled, may be bought of the government at a dollar and a quarter per acre; and with his own land the farmer may do precisely what he will. Nothing in this fine free country is a monopoly; nothing is forbidden or highly taxed; and, one very trifling rate excepted, he has no duties or burdens whatever.

The farmers, with their men, perform all the out-of-door labour, for you never see in this country women at work in the fields, or dragging home fodder for cattle, or carrying their productions to market, &c. The Americans treat their women far too tenderly to allow them to undertake any such severe labours. The women perform the domestic employments, milk the cows, make butter, &c. They live

extremely well, and are always well dressed; indeed, that matter the good ladies carry somewhat to excess, and make their appearance on Sundays in grand state, with gold watches, rings, chains, and so forth.

The food of these farmers is excellent and most abundant;—at breakfast, cold meat and ham, with bread and butter, tea and coffee; in the evening, a similar meal; and roast meats, &c., at dinner. The same viands are set forth every day, by which the ladies are spared much trouble in contriving a variety of dishes. Almost every farmer's wife has in her house a nice spare room to receive her friends in; but there is, nevertheless, not so much hospitality among them as I expected to find.

If a stranger happens to come in when the family are at their meals, he is invited to join them, but should he arrive at any other time, not so much as a glass of milk will be offered him. I was told, too, that though you may pass a night at one of these farm-houses, you are expected to pay for your accommodation, so that I do not see exactly where the hospitality is.

I cannot leave Highland without mentioning my obligations to the amiable family of Bandelier. Every one with whom I became acquainted learned

my passion for insects; but since I had quitted the Dutch Indian settlements, no one had been so complaisant as, either for friendship or payment, to assist me with any contributions; indeed when they possessed any specimens they seemed sometimes quite afraid to show them to me; and I could hardly help laughing at the anxiety they manifested in displaying to me a few butterflies and beetles, as if they feared they ought to offer them, yet were by no means willing to do so. It was in vain that, when I asked to see them, I distinctly stated that I did not desire to have them, but merely to look at them; they evidently did not trust me. Many people had unfortunately "sent them to a museum," or "presented them to a friend," only a few days ago.

• The young son of Mr. Bandelier, however, a lad of fifteen, made an honourable exception. He showed me his collection with the greatest readiness and pleasure, and pressed me, with really touching sincerity and earnestness, to take from it whatever was of any use to me.

From Highland I drove ten miles to Lebanon, to see a newly-founded town, which as yet consists of nothing more than a row of little wooden houses on the edge of the forest; the way to it lies mostly through the prairie. Four miles farther is the farm

of Mr. Hekers; and with astonishment I recognised in him a distinguished and highly-cultivated man, who was compelled for political reasons to quit his native country of Baden, and is now as completely occupied with rural affairs as if he had been born a farmer. To see him in his rustic dress, working among his men, no one would imagine what his former life had been; and his wife surprised me even more, by the calm and cheerful resignation with which she has entered on her new life, and accommodated herself to her change of circumstances. It must have been hard enough for them both at first, to renounce all intellectual intercourse, and associate only with those whose "talk is of oxen."

On returning from this excursion, I lingered a few days more at St. Louis; and then, on the 29th of July, continued my journey on the beautiful steamer "Excelsior," which was going 800 miles farther, to St. Paul.

Thirty miles above St. Louis, you come to the mouth of the Missouri which here pours itself into the Mississippi, and brings all the dirt into its waters, for which it is so notorious. Above the Missouri they are perfectly bright and clear.

On the 30th of July, early in the morning, we arrived at the tiny little town of Hamburg consist-

ing of at most a dozen houses, but in an extremely pretty situation, on a hill, about 100 feet high.

Still more beautiful is the position of Clarksville; and we passed several villages, all consisting only of a few wooden houses, or rather cottages, but which, in consideration of their future greatness and population, are already called towns. The American lives, indeed, so much in the future, that he has little enjoyment of the present. Between Hamburg and the small town of Quincy, the passage on the Mississippi is much pleasanter. The river here abounds in islands, great and small; chains of hills show themselves; the woods become much finer, the trees taller and of larger girth. At Quincy the plains again come into the foreground, and at Keo-Kick the water became so shallow, that the greater part of our lading had to be transferred to a towing-boat. The town of Madison, with the fort of the same name, may be considered a considerable place for this part of the country, as it numbers 3000 or 4000 inhabitants; and still more important is Burlington, which boasts of brick houses, forming broad streets.

Rock Island and Davenport, lying opposite to each other, and only separated by the Mississippi, have also some right to be called towns. None of

these towns or villages, however, have any striking or attractive features; the land is still little broken on either side of the river, and the woods only cleared here and there in small patches, just to make room for the towns. There is little land cultivated near them, unless it lies farther in the interior than I could see.

We remained for the night lying opposite Davenport; and towards eleven o'clock there arose such a violent storm that it threatened to become a perfect hurricane. The flashes of lightning succeeded each other without interruption, the thunder rolled wildly through the roaring of the wind, and the officers and the captain hastened down from their cabins on the upper terrace to the lower floors, fearing the storm might carry them away, as well as the chimney of the engine, as it had done in a similar case three weeks before. We saw the shattered remains of it lying on the shore, as well as a brick house that had been unroofed by the hurricane.

On the morning of the 4th of August we turned into the Fever River, and landed at the little town Galena, not far from its mouth. The position of this town is very charming; one part of it winds round the foot of a beautiful hill, and the other stretches in picturesque groups of habitations up to

its summit. From Galena we turned into the Mississippi, which had now decreased considerably in breadth; but its banks have improved in beauty, if that term could be applied to them at all hitherto; but, in fact, the whole way from New Orleans to this river, a distance of 1600 miles, the aspect the Mississippi presents is enough to drive a painter to despair: all one can do is to try and fill the imagination with the idea of the grandeur of passing between primeval forests and prairies on one of the mightiest rivers of the whole earth, and through regions that, twenty years ago, were untrodden save by the bear and the buffalo, and the wild Indian hunter who pursued them, though now towns and villages are shooting up in them like mushrooms.

This is a grand thing to think of at first, but after a few days one gets tired of the perpetual monotony of the scenery.

The company on this steamer was very mixed indeed. There were two girls, of about twenty years of age, whose behaviour left very little doubt of what class they belonged to; and who, when they passed me as they were leaving the boat, clapped me on the shoulder, and bawled in my ear in the most impudent manner, that I was just like their grandmother, which, as far as my age went, I might have been.

At dinner several of the ladies pelted each other with the gnawed cobs of Indian corn, and it was often not easy for their neighbours to avoid getting a share of the compliment. In the evening they all took possession of the rocking-chairs, and began rocking themselves with all their might. I should have liked to have been artist enough to make a drawing of them in those positions, and showed them what they all looked like. There were ten of these chairs, and the ladies placed them in a circle, threw themselves back in them, many even held their hands over their heads, stuck their feet far out, and then away they went full swing. There was certainly nothing very delicate or feminine in their appearance while they were engaged in this exercise.

I have been told I must not judge the manners of the Americans by what I have seen on board the steamers, and I am willing to believe it; yet did I not, in fact, see more of the natural character in the unrestrained freedom of such meetings than in the fashionable parties of New Orleans and New York? In the parties, I should never have found out what a pleasure the gentlemen take in sticking their feet up upon chairs, or even upon tables; nor witnessed the performances of the fair sex on the rock-



ing-chairs. In private society, I should never have known who had so little respect for themselves, or their company, and so little genuine love of cleanliness and order, as to come to table in dirty linen, torn dresses, dirty boots, &c. I should not have seen gentlemen chewing tobacco like common sailors,—laying the bones of fowls, after they had picked them, on the table-cloth by their plates, and doing other things that I hardly like to describe. I should not have seen how ill brought-up the children were; and I should never have had occasion to remark that astonishing zeal in favour of their own particular orthodoxy, whatever that might be, which induced ladies and gentlemen, the moment I came on deck, to come up to me and ask to what Church I belonged! “Really, Sir,” or “Madam,” I used to reply, “I do not wish to question you about your Church, and I should be glad if you would follow my example.”

If I asked for a book in the presence of one of these zealous personages, they would present me with the Bible or a religious tract; and I must own this rude and abrupt manner of forcing their opinions upon me, gave me anything but a favourable opinion of them, and did not at all dispose me to listen to what they might have further to say; indeed, I used

to shun these proselyte-makers as I would a pestilence.

Early in the morning of the 6th of August we entered a small lake, from the midst of which rose a little island; and the whole region lay before us so still and romantic, the island looked so secluded from all the world, that there only wanted a cell and a hermit to complete the picture.

This small lake forms a kind of entrance to a larger one, called the Pepin Lake, which is about twenty miles long, and four broad. Both are formed by the Mississippi, and the sight of the larger almost made me amends for my long and tedious voyage up the river.

To the south-west, its basin is surrounded by a chain of lofty hills, some of which fall in precipitous rocky walls of 300 or 400 feet in height. To one of these, called Marden's Rock, a melancholy tradition is attached of a young Indian girl, who, though betrothed to one of her own people, had become warmly attached to a white man, who, having lost his way, had come into her wigwam. When the time approached for her wedding, finding that she could not otherwise escape, she had rushed to the top of this rock and plunged into the lake below, which restored to her bridegroom only her inanimate corpse.

The other side of the lake is partly encircled by hills, partly by gently swelling slopes, with a range of mountains in the background; and villages and farms lie scattered about the shore. I was never weary of looking at this beautiful landscape reflected in the smooth watery mirror beneath, and considered the rate of the steamer much too swift when it carried us through it to a third lake, that of St. Croix, formed by the river of the same name, and which is longer, but considerably narrower, than Lake Pepin. It is drawn, like a long white scarf, through hills and plains and woods, and leaves scarcely room for a few small islands in its channel.

## CHAP. IX.

ST. PAUL.—ST. ANTHONY'S FALLS.—THE FUR HUNTERS.  
—A DRIVE IN A STAGE-COACH.—STILLWATER.—ST.  
CROIX.—RETURN TO GALENA.—AMERICAN PATIENCE.  
—CHICAGO.—LAKE MICHIGAN.—MILWAUKEE.—THE  
SUBTERRANEAN RAILWAY.—THE MORMONS.—LAKE SU-  
PERIOR.—THE INDIANS.—LAKES HURON AND ERIE.—  
CLEVELAND.—THE FALLS OF NIAGARA.—THE VILLAGE.

ON the morning of the 7th of August we arrived at St. Paul, the capital of the district of Minnesota. The town is divided into two parts; one of which lies on the shore, and the other on the upland above. Like all the other places in this district, it is not more than five years old, has arisen with astonishing rapidity, and already counts more than 5000 inhabitants. Between the wooden houses stand some stately-looking edifices of brick, and, scattered round to the distance of two miles, lie pretty country houses in gardens planted on the land that is only just cleared of forest.

Minnesota is not yet incorporated with the United<sup>•</sup>

States, but is only a territory. In order to be recognised as a state, a tract of land must be inhabited by a certain number of whites—from 60,000 to a 100,000,—and as long as this is not the case it remains only a territory or district. In these any one may settle, taking land wherever he can find it, without asking any one's consent, or having anything whatever to pay, and being entirely free from taxes. As soon, however, as the territory is declared a state, he must pay a dollar and a quarter an acre for all the land he has taken, or give it up.

Before the declaration a general meeting of the inhabitants takes place, to determine by a majority of votes for or against the introduction of slavery. In Minnesota the question has been determined in the negative, not so much from philanthropic considerations as on account of the nature of the climate. This is healthy, and perfectly adapted to Europeans, who can here perform all kinds of field labour as well as at home; and, where this is the case, their work is cheaper than that of slaves.

The Territory of Minnesota contains 166,000 square miles, or 106,000,000 of acres of land; and, although it has been known to the whites more than 100 years, it was only in 1849 that the Government made a regular examination of it, and declared

it very fertile. It then purchased the land from the natives (a few small portions excepted), and sent the greater part of them to the Indian Territory. In these cases the Government pays the Indian chiefs usually about five or six cents the acre, and the expenses of measurement, of transporting the people to the new grounds, of negotiating with them, making them presents, &c., are reckoned at so much more; so that the land costs ten or twelve cents, and is sold to settlers, as I have said, at one and a quarter dollar per acre.

For these few years past the population of Minnesota has been going on with astounding rapidity, and it will probably in a short time become a state. In the year 1852 there were scarcely 20,000 whites in it, but the year after nearly double that number. Hitherto the only exports have been boards and timber of every kind; the first being floated down the river to St. Louis, whence they are sent further. You see in this country steam and water saw-mills at work in places where the smoke of the Indian's wigwam and the traces of the wild buffalo and the deer have hardly disappeared. Here nature and human industry are brought into close conflict; and never was land so eagerly seized on as in Minnesota. Large quantities of corn, potatoes, and so forth are

nevertheless imported from the neighbouring states, as the settlers are still too much occupied with clearing the forest and with the saw-mills to grow all that is required; but in a few years they will be able to raise not only all that is wanted for home consumption, but for export also, for the soil is extraordinarily rich.

It is a beautiful and happy country, which one may, with a good conscience, recommend to all emigrants, especially such as bring with them strong hands, willing industry, and a love of order. Here the settler has no deadly climate to encounter, and may hope for a speedy reward to his industry; and not, as in some countries, look forward to a long life of toil, of which his children only can reap the fruits.

I came to St. Paul with an introductory letter to a Mr. Holingshead, who has built himself a house at a short distance from the town, on a hill, whence he can overlook the pleasant panorama.

The surface of the whole country is undulating, and still occupied in great part by prairie and forest. The waving form affords a wide extent of view, and Mr. Holingshead pointed out a hill whence it is said you can see for 100 miles round, and which serves as a convenient landmark for wanderers who happen to lose their way. Mr. Holingshead was so good as

to invite me to a drive of nine miles 'to the most celebrated falls of the Mississippi, those known as St. Anthony's.

We went by the prettiest roads, over plain and hill, between prairies and thickets, and lately broken-up lands, where the newly arrived settler had only just set up his log-but in the midst of his fields. Every step that brought me nearer to the falls increased my curiosity, for I had heard them mentioned by the Americans as among the most remarkable scenes of the kind. I could not, indeed, expect any great mass of water, as the river was so shallow near the falls that we could drive through it; but what was wanting in volume would, I hope, be made up in height.

I was soon standing on the edge of these renowned falls, and I certainly was beyond measure astonished; not, however, at their grandeur, but their insignificance. There were not *falls*, but only one fall, and that not above twenty feet high. Its breadth was indeed considerable; but that only served to make it look still lower than it was. It was also much disfigured by a number of trunks of trees that had floated towards it, and by a saw-mill. The prettiest thing about the fall was the rock over which it fell, which was as smoothly perpendicular



as if it had been cut by a chisel; but there was nothing romantic to view in the environs, merely the forest, which shut out every other prospect.

Here, then, was another of the scenes which the Americans make such a talk about, but which I must say I think only those who have seen very little could extol so highly.

I do not like to echo what others would say out of mere complaisance, but always to state simply what my own feelings and opinions are, though without the slightest wish to represent them as the only correct ones.

On leaving the Mississippi Falls we made, on our return to St. Paul, a little circuit, to see the “Fall of the Minne-ha-ha!” or “Laughing Water.” This little cascade is scarcely three feet broad, but falls sixty feet over a rocky precipice into a basin below, which is enclosed by wooded hills or walls of rock. The whole bears a great resemblance to an extinct crater of a volcano; but there is nowhere about it the least trace of lava or anything that might strengthen such a conjecture. Between the rock and the water of the fall there is room to pass; and, on the whole, this miniature cascade pleased me better than the celebrated one of the Mississippi; possibly, in some measure, because I expected no-

thing from it, while of the St. Anthony's Falls I had heard much laudation. The view from the top of the Minne-ha-ha Fall was extremely pretty. The eye wandered far over the undulating prairie country, on the one side to the River Minnesota, on the other following the course of the Mississippi, as beyond the Fall it winds through a narrow rocky channel.

We passed on our way Fort Snelling, which is built of stone on a solid rocky foundation, and, with its corner towers, must certainly be to Indians impregnable. It is here that the Minnesota pours itself into the Mississippi.

We found encamped near this fort a party of the fur-hunters, as they are called. These people lead a curious life. They associate constantly with the Indians, and even choose their wives from among them, occupying themselves entirely with hunting and barter trade. They remain for weeks and months together in the thick forest, wander far up towards the north, and endeavour to make acquaintance with all the tribes of natives, from whom they get furs in exchange for glass beads, coloured handkerchiefs, &c. When they have collected a sufficient load, they pack it on a small two-wheeled car drawn by one horse, and proceed to the nearest large town to sell it, bringing with them on their return

tea, coffee, sugar, and whatever they need for their own consumption, as well as goods for their barter trade with the Indians.

They encamp during their journeys in little tents under the open sky, and become so attached to their wild way of life, that they will not exchange it for a settled situation of the greatest comfort. Although they often get a great deal of money for their furs, they mostly come back from the towns quite poor; for, like the gold diggers of California, they cannot resist the temptations offered them, and soon find themselves at the end of their hardly earned treasure. He among them may be accounted as a prudent man who keeps enough to purchase goods to continue his Indian trade.

We brought back from our excursion most excellent appetites, and found at Mr. Holingshead's house a most excellent dinner awaiting us. Afterwards I went with Mrs. Holingshead to see a grotto two miles from St. Paul, which runs for half a mile into a sand-hill; but a brook that rises in it, and has no actual bed, makes it wet and damp all over, so that a walk in its interior is not very agreeable; especially as there is not much to reward the trouble, for there is nowhere any trace of a dripping-stone to be seen. The prettiest thing about it is the kind

of irregular hall that forms the entrance, and which, being very cool, is a favourite resort of the townspeople on hot days for purposes of social recreation.

On the 9th of August I left St. Paul in order to go to Lake Superior; a journey which is made partly on the River St. Croix and partly by land. I had arranged to go in company with a gentleman who was travelling the same way, and was to wait for him two days at Stillwater, a place about sixteen miles off, to which I was to go in the stage-coach. The company consisted, when I got in, of a young man who never spoke a word, and a young woman who never held her tongue, and who in the course of a quarter of an hour had made me acquainted with the whole of her affairs. When we had gone about two miles our company received an addition. It was a young woman who, to judge by her dress, might have been thought to belong to the wealthy classes, as she was "clothed in silk attire," with abundance of ornaments; but her behaviour enabled us only too soon to certify her position. She had on one side of her face two blue spots that looked very much as if they had been received in a fight; she chewed tobacco at a prodigious rate; and, pulling from her pocket a bottle of brandy, she proceeded to refresh herself with it, and then, with great

politeness, offered it to us. She talked to every one, though from the silent gentleman and myself she received no answer; but with the gossiping young woman she was soon engaged in conversation. This society, however, did not suit the lady's views, and she soon called to the coachman to stop, got out, and joined the men on the outside.

We stopped to dine at an inn, and as this person was a *white* we were compelled to endure her company at table; another instance of the wisdom of classing people by the colour of their skins.

For this sixteen miles' journey we took, including the dinner-time, six hours; but the way was so extremely pretty, that I could with pleasure have repeated it (only not in the stage-coach). It led through park-like meadows, past small lakes said to abound in fish, and then, again, we had beautiful views over the wide prairie and the Lake of St. Croix.

At Stillwater I was received in the most friendly manner in the house of a Mr. Skullenberg, and there I waited, according to agreement, for my travelling companion; but, to my great surprise, he neither came nor wrote,—the very first instance of a failure in politeness towards a woman that I ever met with in an American.

On the 12th of August I went on board a very tiny steamer for St. Croix. Stillwater lies at the end of the lake, so that we soon got into the St. Croix River, which is only navigable for very small vessels; and at the town of St. Croix it forms rapids and waterfalls, and above this is so shallow and full of rocks, that the smallest boats can hardly make their way. The views around of wildly picturesque rocks and woods are beautiful; but a traveller anxious about personal accommodation would perhaps scarcely find compensation in them for all the inconveniences of these small steamers. These regions are as yet visited by few besides woodcutters and dealers in wood, who come on board ragged, dirty, and not unfrequently drunk; and, since there is only one cabin, you must perforce associate with them. Our table was miserably served, our tablecloth disgustingly dirty, the place of glasses was supplied by tea-cups, and, what was far worse, I had a drunken man opposite to me, and could hear another snoring in one of the berths; so that I shall not easily forget this passage. We ran aground on sand-banks several times, and did not reach St. Croix till the following day, although we had left Stillwater at eight in the morning; and I had the satisfaction of passing the night on a very dirty bed,

that was, moreover, as hard and lumpy as if it were filled with stones.

*August 13th.* At nine o'clock in the morning we got in; and the steamer stopped in a basin so completely enclosed by rocks sixty or seventy feet high, that the entrance can hardly be seen. One of these rocks, which stands rather apart from the rest, bears the name of the "Devil's Chimney."

As soon as I landed I tried to find some one to guide me to the two falls of the St. Croix, the Taylor, and the Upper Fall; of both of which I had heard much at Stillwater.

When we Europeans talk of a waterfall we understand a tolerable mass of water throwing itself from a considerable height. But the Americans are more easily contented, and make up by the grandeur of the name for what is wanting in the thing. A sort of rapid, of scarcely three feet in height, before which the steamer stopped, but which I should have scarcely noticed, was pointed out to me as the Taylor Fall; and about a mile further we came to the Upper Fall, which was perhaps seven or eight feet high, and to which also the name of rapid would have been more applicable.

The town of St. Croix consists as yet only of a hotel, a dozen wooden houses, and a few saw-mills

lying in the neighbouring forest; but the people have hopes that it will shortly rise into a considerable town; only, it is to be observed, that wherever in America there are a few huts standing the occupants always cherish the same expectation.

The weather at St. Paul and Stillwater was already cold, cloudy, and rainy, more than it is with us in the month of November; so that I was strongly advised to give up the idea of going to Lake Superior by land; and, in consideration of the probable recurrence of my constant torment, the Sumatra fever, which might under these circumstances be dangerous, I hearkened to this advice, and returned to Galena on the Mississippi, a distance of 300 miles; from Galena I went by stage-coach to Warren (25 miles); and thence, 175 miles further, by rail to Chicago, where I arrived on the 20th of August.

There is not much to be said concerning this journey: the country is mostly undulating in surface, a great deal covered with wood, and, where cultivated, extremely fertile. I found, however, more interest in observing the Americans themselves, who unite so many contradictory qualities, that they were a constant enigma to me. At one moment the merest trifle, a word, is sufficient to set their blood boiling and to excite them to fury, and even the



commission of murder. At another time they manifest the most extraordinary and invincible patience. For example, with their servants, who really often appear to be more masters in the house than those who bear the name, they will beg for the performance of the commonest service as if it were quite a favour. Assuredly I should always desire to see servants treated with kindness, and as if they belonged to the family; but I would nevertheless insist upon their performing as exactly every duty they had undertaken as I should mine towards them; but here people do not seem at all of this way of thinking.

On the drive from Galena to Warren the patience with which nine gentlemen submitted to the whims of the coachman did, I must own, considerably disturb mine. At the last stage where we changed horses travellers are accustomed, when they arrive in good time, to take tea, or some other refreshments. We, however, were very late, and, as we feared we should miss the train on the railroad, we desired the coachman, who also is changed at every station, to drive on immediately. He, however, on his side, having probably an understanding with the landlord, *ordered* us—that is really the right word—to take tea, and refused to go on for half an hour. We were

not obedient enough to do as we were bid, and take the tea; but the coachman disappeared, and all our calling was of no avail. When at length he came the gentlemen requested him, in the most polite manner possible, to be good enough to make what haste he could; but though the road was excellent, and the horses quite fresh, we scarcely went beyond a walk. No entreaties nor prayers, not even bribes—for some tried that method—had any effect; yet, with the exception of an occasional muttered exclamation, that was not a blessing, from some of the gentlemen, there was no notice taken of his behaviour. I, as a woman, could of course do nothing; but I could not help wishing for some half-dozen of my so-called phlegmatic countrymen; I think they would have managed matters better. Fortunately we got to Warren just three minutes before the departure of the train, and, as no one had any heavy luggage, we were able to get into the carriage. A few minutes more would have cost us a whole day; for it was Saturday, and in the State of Illinois no trains run on Sundays.

The town of Chicago lies in a plain on Lake Michigan, and is chiefly remarkable for its rapid growth. In 1830 a single log-house was built on the spot, and as four years afterwards there was reason to think it

might be an advantageous place for a town, people began to settle there rapidly, and now there are 60,000 inhabitants.

The whole State of Illinois has made very rapid progress; and, as the climate is good, the land excellent, and the prairie very easily transformed into fields, the concourse of immigrants is very considerable.

The Americans are the most enterprising people in the world; they are making railroads in all directions; every lake and river is in their territory covered with steamers; and the means of communication are in existence often before there is any population to profit by them. But it is precisely these means of communication that make settlement so easy and rapid; and land is cleared, farms established, and towns and villages built as if by magic.

On the 22nd of August I went by Lake Michigan to Milwaukee (ninety-six miles), in the State of Wisconsin. This town also is of very recent origin, having been founded in 1838; but it now contains 35,000 inhabitants, of whom one-third are Germans.

I found here for the first time a good German hotel, kept by a Mr. Weststein, where we had excellent entertainment and handsome clean rooms for the very reasonable charge of a dollar a day. In all

the towns that I had visited hitherto, when I asked for a German hotel, I was shown to nothing better than a dirty public-house, evidently intended for the poorest class of travellers.

I remained in Milwaukee for some days, and experienced from the Germans, and especially from their wives, the utmost kindness and attention. The engaging friendliness of their manners, and the trouble they took to please me, I shall certainly never forget. Every afternoon a party was made by Mr. Nopastek to visit some pretty spot in the neighbourhood—Melm's Gardens, Pest's Pavilion, and so forth; the prospects were extremely pleasing, and, though the country is wanting in hills and mountains, this disadvantage was compensated by the magnificent mirror of the lake, whose surface extended beyond the horizon.

Besides my German friends, I became acquainted here with a young American lady, whose husband, Mr. Booth, is the editor of a vehement Abolitionist paper, and lately took part in an insurrection that occurred on account of a fugitive slave. A negro who had made his escape from one of the Slave States was discovered and put in prison, and was about to be delivered up to his master, who had arrived a few days after him; but, on the day appointed for the

slave to be given up, a party of Abolitionists assembled, with Mr. Booth at their head, stormed the prison, set the negro at liberty, and assisted him to escape to Canada.

Mr. Booth was arrested, but subsequently released on parole and giving personal security for 2,000 dollars until the termination of the proceedings against him. Should the decision be unfavourable to him, he will probably be imprisoned for six months, and have to pay a fine of 1,000 dollars.\* The laws are in general very conflicting, or rather very easy to evade, in this country; and even for grave offences, fraudulent bankruptcies, incendiary fires, and murder, the criminal may always flatter himself with the hope of escaping punishment. But favouring the escape of a fugitive slave is another thing; and although anywhere else than in slaveholding countries it would be regarded as scarcely an offence at all, perhaps even a meritorious act, it is precisely against this offence that American judges are inexorable. How revolting is the very thought of this fugitive slave law in a young republican state, that might be a model for all the world.

\* The free negroes in Milwaukee have presented Mr. Booth with a handsome testimonial for his exertions in defending their poor hunted brother.

In Illinois there has been a secret society formed for assisting slaves to escape from the neighbouring states and get to Canada, and for this purpose there are several stations at which carriages and horses are kept in constant readiness to transport them as quickly as possible across the frontier. This is denominated the "Subterranean Railway;" and if the slave is only fortunate enough to reach the first of these stations, he may generally consider himself safe. Should the pursuit be so hot that it is not considered safe to send him on, he is kept concealed, and every means afforded him to effect his escape.

On the 26th of August I left Milwaukee by the steamer Troy, which traverses the whole extent of Lake Michigan as far as Sault St. Marie, a distance of 304 miles.

Lake Michigan is certainly a magnificent piece of water, almost like a sea, for it is 400 miles long and 80 broad; but its shores are extremely dull and monotonous, presenting nothing to the eye in fact but a boundless plain. They nowhere rise above thirty feet, and the towns, which alone vary the perpetual sameness, are very uninteresting, as they are all exactly alike.

Towards the end of the lake are some islands, called "Beaver Islands," one of which is inhabited

by a branch of the Mormon sect; the great body of them, as is well known, occupying a country far in the interior, near the Salt Lake. We stopped here, as we had done at many other places, and I went ashore in order to see some of these people, whose mode of life is described as so entirely different from that of any other Christian sect. I had heard that they not only ate their food and worked in community, but that they had both goods and wives in common; that the mothers kept the children till they were three years old, and that they were then taken away from them, &c.

But, when I questioned an aged and venerable-looking Mormon whom I met upon these points, he declared that the only part of my information that was correct was, that of their working in common at field and other labour. He informed me that they had among them a chief or priest, who was also a prophet, and could cure diseases by merely laying his hand on the patient; but to the cure of broken legs the divine power of the holy man did not extend. This priest alone was under no necessity of working; but he did work, my informant added, more than the most industrious of the community; for he was occupied, not only the whole day, but the greater part of the night also with

writing. When I asked what it was that he wrote; whether it was religious tracts or translations to send abroad for the propagation of his opinions, the reply was, that no one knew what he wrote — “it was a holy mystery !”

Further, I learned from this man that, when their prophet died, another was immediately appointed by God, and his will made known by an angel; but in this instance, nevertheless, the prophet has himself played the part of the angel, having appointed his successor, who, as he tells the good people, was made known to him in a dream.

On the 28th of August we reached the end, or rather the beginning of Lake Michigan, which is connected with Lake Superior by the River Sault St. Marie, a river of only a few miles in length. Immediately before its entrance into Lake Superior this river forms strong rapids or falls, and its bed becomes full of rocks and reefs, over which the water rushes with tremendous force, so that the navigation is interrupted for the space of a mile. When I arrived a canal with locks was in process of construction, which will take ships from one lake to the other. The expenses of this undertaking are estimated at 650,000 dollars. Lake Superior lies 792



feet above the level of the sea, and some 30 feet above Lake Michigan.

At Sault St. Marie I had to wait a day for the steamer which goes to Lake Superior, and I stayed at a small but very neat boarding-house kept by a Mr. Johnson, who appears to be so thoroughly worthy a person, and his family not less so, that no traveller, I think, could fail to be contented and comfortable with them.

Late in the evening of the 29th of August the steamer "Baltimore" set out on its tour round the lake. The night was very foggy, and, through the thoughtlessness of the steersman in keeping too close to the shore, we ran aground on a sand-bank opposite a place called White-Fish Points, and had to wait for daylight, and get out the whole cargo. Even then it was not till after twelve hours of very hard work that the vessel could be made to float again. We were scarcely 100 feet from the mainland, and might as easily have run on that as on the sandbank; but such careless doings as this, and much worse, are so common in the United States, that no one takes the least notice of them.

On this occasion I saw the village of White-Fish Points, which is inhabited by Indians exclusively engaged in fishing. A few Americans have taken

up their abode among them, in order to barter for their fish, which is salted and dried. Lake Superior is, it seems, celebrated for the abundance of fine and well-flavoured fish that it contains; and, in consequence of food being thus plentiful, the whole shore was in former days thickly peopled by Indians. When the French Jesuits visited it in the 17th century they found wigwams with a population of 2000 persons. Now they are almost all gone; the native race has faded away and vanished before the white man and his brandy, and some of the last lingering remnants have been lately transported to the Indian Territory. Around all this vast inland sea it will soon be rare to find a native Indian.

Lake Superior is the largest body of freshwater in the known world, being 855 miles in length by 160 in breadth; and containing consequently 32,000 square miles of surface. Its greatest depth is 900 feet. It was discovered by the Jesuits in the year 1641, and thirty years afterwards the surrounding lands were taken possession of by the French Government.

The copper found near it was first mentioned in 1659, when the natives brought to the Jesuits a mass of pure metal weighing from 600 to 700 pounds. It is, however, only within the last ten years, that is

in 1845, that regular mining operations have been commenced.

The mines all lie several miles from the lake; and the deepest shaft is less than 700 feet. The largest mass of copper ever found is said to have weighed fifty tons.

We had to enter so many bays, and stop at so many little recently-established villages, or towns, as the Americans call them, to carry them provisions and various necessaries, that we certainly went full 500 miles before reaching the end of the lake.

At Lepointe, in the neighbourhood of which lie twelve islands called the Twelve Apostles, we accidentally fell in with a great number of Indians; for in the month of September the American Government makes a yearly distribution of provisions, clothing, money, &c., to the chiefs and principal men of the tribes living in the neighbourhood; and, as this distribution takes place at Lepointe, the Indians who expected presents had assembled there.

I saw here a considerable number of the Chippewa and Sioux Indians, and they were strong handsome men, and much taller than those I had seen before in the south-western countries. They had, however, broad cheek bones, lank hair, that fell partly over their faces, and a very ugly dirty-yellowish skin, that

looked like leather. How they ever came by the name of "Redskins," I cannot imagine. There certainly were among them many who appeared of that colour all over, but on any close inspection it became evident that they were painted, though the colour was certainly very well rubbed in. But notwithstanding the little defects I have mentioned, many of these savages had handsome regular-featured faces; they wore their hair combed smooth, European dresses, and some had acquired a certain amount of education. Some spoke French or English, could even write those languages, and had also learned some handicraft, or devoted themselves to trade; but the majority preferred going half-naked and living very wretchedly, to submitting to work; and the Indians inhabiting the cold countries are just as unwilling to labour, either in tilling the ground or in mechanical arts, as the tribes of the warm South.

It was not till the fifth day of our voyage that we arrived at *Fond-du-Lac*, the extreme western point of the lake. I had now traversed its whole extent, but I could not share the general enthusiasm of the company on the subject of the landscape. If we came in sight of a few wooden huts clustered together here and there, the exclamations went from

mouth to mouth, "Ah! how beautiful! How splendid! What a picture might be made of it!"

The shores of Lake Superior are certainly far more picturesque than those of Lake Michigan; they still slumber for the most part in the profound repose of primæval nature, and the dark forest and the chains of hills gave them a kind of beauty; but there was too much monotony in the scenery, and the hills were too insignificant in height, to inspire me with much admiration. The St. Ignacio, on the Neepigan Bay, is said to be 1300 feet high, but we had not the good fortune to get a sight of this Colossus.

The newly-settled villages are all very insignificant, consisting at present only of small log-houses in the midst of the woods: very little land is yet cleared, and the poor settlers depend on the steamers for almost all the necessaries of life.

Among the travellers here I met again with some ladies and gentlemen who were uneasy in their minds on the subject of the religion I professed, of how I came by the money for my travelling expenses, and so forth; and I must own I was tempted to give them sharp answers, in order to have done with their very impertinent queries. On the second day of our voyage, there came on board a lady

about thirty, who was certainly rather too youthfully dressed for her age, as she had long ringlets falling on her shoulders, and a round straw hat ; but scarcely had the other ladies cast a glance on her than one of them came to me, and warned me by no means to speak to the stranger, as it was thought she did not look like a person of good character. I said I thought there could be scarcely sufficient ground in her looks only for so grave an accusation ; but no one except myself exchanged a word with her.

In the evening, as usual, preparations were made for dancing quadrilles ; and when the music began for the third, a gentleman led out the excommunicated lady, but no other pair stood up. The gentleman inquired what was meant by this seemingly intentional insult, asserting, at the same time, that he knew the lady,—that she had been on a visit to some relatives, and was now returning to her husband at Fond-du-Lac,—and that her character was perfectly unblemished. Nobody gave him one syllable of answer, and after waiting some time he and his partner were obliged to sit down.

I hoped that at least these extremely virtuous ladies would have the delicacy not to dance any more after this, by way of making some slight amends for their offensive behaviour ; but my hopes

were vain. Scarcely had the object of their scorn and her champion retired, than they all stood up at once, and the dancing began again with as much spirit as ever.

The next morning I was attacked again with the old question of what religion I belonged to? Whereupon I felt so wrathful as to reply, "Certainly not to the same as you and the rest of the ladies here; for my religion would have forbidden me to insult an unoffending fellow creature." I suppose this explanation was satisfactory, for they did not ask me any more questions.

At Fond-du-Lac there are already five *beginnings* of towns, situated in a semi-circle on the shores of the lake, and so near that, when finished, they must almost touch each other; but I doubt whether this will ever be the case, as, except the copper mining, there is not much to be done in this part of the country, for the soil is bad. They will probably undergo the fate of the town of Trinidad in California, and perish as untimely abortions—die, one might say, before they were born.

On the 6th of August I returned to Sault St. Marie, after having been ten days in the steamer with the same party. The ladies had all by this time grown astonishingly fond of one another, and one who lived

in St. Marie even invited me to come and take a cup of tea with her. But the moment the anchor fell the new friends seemed to cool towards each other considerably, and hurried away in different directions, scarcely taking time to say good-bye.

The lady who had invited me also forgot, perhaps intentionally, to indicate the address of the house where the cup of tea was to be obtained; but this did not afflict me greatly, and I betook myself very contentedly to the comfortable boarding-house of Mr. Johnson.

On the 7th of August, at an early hour, I went on board the steamer "Illinois," in order to continue my journey northward. The first part of it lay along the River St. Marie, which forms on its course many little lakes, and bathes some very pretty shores. This river leads to Strait Mackinac, and this again to the next largest American lake, namely Lake Huron, which is 260 miles long and 160 broad, and contains 20,000 square miles. It lies 578 feet above the level of the sea. The environs of this lake are prettier than those of the Michigan, though still rather monotonous. They are undulating and covered with wood, and here and there intersected by pleasant ranges of hills.

The next day we left the Lake Huron, and



entered the River St. Clair, on one bank of which town follows town in rapid succession, interspersed with meadows and fruitful fields, whilst on the other lie numerous saw-mills, and several Indian villages. Even the Indians seem here to be roused from their customary indolence, for the land round their villages is cleared and planted. The river had a very animated appearance, for there were many sailing vessels, mostly laden with timber, being towed by steamers through the short river into the small Lake of St. Clair, which is so full of sand-banks and shoals that it can only be navigated in the day-time. The shores of this lake are so flat in many places that the water is continually flooding them, and forming sloughs and morasses. From Lake St. Clair the River Detroit leads into Lake Erie—the whole distance from Lake Huron being not more than eighty miles. Towards noon we landed at Cleveland, the pride of the State of Ohio, situated at the entrance of Lake Erie; and in the few hours of my stay Dr. Langsdorf made me acquainted with the town and its environs.

Cleveland consists, in fact, of two towns, Cleveland itself and Ohio, which is only separated from it by a ravine, and, having been lately included in the former, has thereby lost its distinctive name.

The view of these two prosperous towns, with the beautiful ravine, about fifty feet deep, between them, richly covered with shrubs and trees, and with a pretty river winding through it, was really very pleasing.

The actual entrance into Lake Erie is by a canal. In the town of Cleveland I most admired Euclid-street, as it is called, consisting of pretty, tasteful houses, which might be called villas, as they are now separated from one another by groves and meadows; but in a few years these will, probably, have given place to new houses.

The steamer "Crescent City" was one of the most superb vessels I was ever on board of. Whichever way I looked there was nothing to be seen but velvet and gold, and costly carpets, and enormous looking-glasses; and a lofty cupola of beautiful coloured glass shed a rich light over all these grandeurs.

There were 1200 passengers on board; and, in consequence of this great number, people lived rather as in a town than a ship, and went about, no more troubling themselves about one another than if they had been on a public walk. But these steamers are, nevertheless, not altogether convenient in their arrangements, as the Americans do not care so much

about that as they do for magnificence, luxury, and show. The windows, for instance, round the galleries, were of coloured glass, so richly ornamented with arabesques that they were of no use to look out of, as you could see neither lake nor landscape through them, and even the light they admitted was so dimmed that you could hardly see to do anything. In the cabins of the lower story, intended for first-class passengers, there were five or six berths, and for fifty or sixty ladies there was only one small washing-room, and that fitted up with but two wash-hand stands. One had to stand waiting and watching for an opportunity just to wash one's face and hands; and it was necessary to bring both glass and towel, for glass there was none, and the few towels were wet through. The attendant appeared to be only there for the look of the thing, for she sat dressed like a lady on a sofa, doing crochet work, and took no notice of anybody. Fortunately the voyage on Lake Erie did not last long, for on the morning of the 9th we came to Buffalo, a pleasant town of 60,000 inhabitants. But my impatience to see the renowned Falls of Niagara, now only twenty miles off, was so great, that, bad as the weather was, I went on directly to the place called Niagara-Falls Village, and arrived quite safely at a pretty little

boarding-house, situated close to the rapids of the mighty stream, which here divides into two arms, and then rushes on with stormy swiftness to its fall. I had been, however, so shaken lately by repeated attacks of the fever\*, that when I got there I was compelled to give up all thoughts of going to the Fall that night, and betake myself at once to bed.

\* I had hitherto been keeping it off, by constantly taking quinine, but only for short periods. In Buffalo the following remedy was recommended to me:—A teaspoonful of finely pulverised cayenne pepper and five or six teaspoonfuls of white sugar dissolved in half a tumbler of good brandy; and of this mixture two teaspoonfuls to be taken every hour, beginning when there is reason to expect the return of the fever, and going on till the whole has been taken. The first time I took this medicine the fever kept off for two months; and when afterwards I had another attack, and took the same remedy again, the fever never returned.

## CHAP. X.

THE FALLS OF NIAGARA. — LAKE ONTARIO. — THE THOUSAND ISLANDS. — MONTREAL. — QUEBEC. — THE AMERICAN RAILROADS. — NEW YORK. — THINGS NOTICEABLE. — THE HOTELS. — BLACK MINSTRELS. — EMANCIPATION. — PROCEEDINGS IN COURTS OF JUSTICE.

*August 10th.* This was a day never to be forgotten in the annals of my life — one of those which brilliantly rewarded me for all the toils and hardships by which they were purchased ; for on this day I beheld one of the most sublime and wonderful scenes of God's beautiful world — the Falls of Niagara ! What the eye sees, what the soul feels, at this spectacle, can never be described : painter and poet would despair of success in such an attempt. Did a man meet his mortal enemy on this spot, he must at once forgive him ; and should one who has doubted of the existence of God come to this, one of the noblest of his altars, he must, I think, return converted and tranquillised. Oh ! that I could have shared with all my friends, with all mankind, the emotions awakened by this wonder of creation.

I was first led by the obliging Mrs. Teuscher, my

hostess, to the American Fall, and thought certainly that nothing could be more magnificent than that. The enormous mass of water falls over a vast, broad, perpendicular wall of rock, and sends up such clouds as if the whole river were dashing itself into spray; and yet scarcely 100 yards from the fall it flows on so smoothly and quietly that the smallest boat may glide over it in perfect safety.

Still more immense, however, is the volume of water on the Canadian side, and still more considerable the extent of the fall, which, as it has assumed the form of a horseshoe, goes by this name; and on the whole this must be pronounced the finest of the two.

During sunshine, beautiful rainbows are formed over both Falls in the clouds of spray. The sound of the fall I did not find so deafening, nor distinguishable so far off as I had been told. According to descriptions I had read, the thunder of it could be heard for forty miles, but I really did not hear it myself for more than a mile.

The Horseshoe Fall is 2100 feet broad, and 149 high, the American 1140 feet broad and 164 high; the volume of water falling is estimated at 670,250 tons in a minute. On the Canadian side you can pass for a certain distance under the Fall; and for this purpose guides and clothes are kept in readiness.

The view from beneath is something more than grand, it is dreadful in its beauty. The tremendous roar of the body of water rushing over your head, and lashed into milk-white foam all round you,—the slipperiness of the constantly wet stone ledge you stand on above the abyss into which the water falls,—the over-hanging masses of rock which from time to time detach themselves,—all this is really so overpowering, if not dangerous, that I would not advise every one to try it.

It was not till I had gazed a long time at the Falls that I could give any attention to the environs. The river divides, as I have said, into two arms, of which one forms the American, and the other the Canadian, side of the Falls. The two are nevertheless quite near, and only separated by a small island, about a mile in length and half a mile broad, the character of which is quite in keeping with the sublime scene where it is placed. It is covered by majestic trees, nearly the largest I ever saw in America (California excepted), for there were many amongst them whose trunks had a diameter of four feet. Hitherto this sanctuary of Nature has been respected by man; no hand has presumed to make a path through it, and Heaven grant it may remain so: but it is scarcely to be hoped that all future proprie-

tors will resemble the present one, who is so remarkable an exception to the majority as to prefer the beauty of nature to the sound of dollars. Very large sums have been offered him for this spot; there were plans for building hotels, baths, places of amusement, upon it; but precisely for that reason he would not sell it. He determined that the sacred silence of the grove should be undisturbed and undesecrated by the restless movements of a busy crowd, and remain what it has hitherto been, the vestibule to the holy temple of this wondrous work of God.

In the rapids of the Horseshoe Fall there stands, not more than forty feet from it, a small stone tower, which is reached by a little bridge; and many an hour have I lingered there, gazing, fascinated by the sight of the rushing waters. During the five days I spent at Niagara I could scarcely tear myself away from them, and the longer I looked the more difficult it became: but so it is often with what is really sublime and beautiful; you need time to understand and to feel it.

Few years pass without a sacrifice of human life being offered to Niagara. A few months before I was there, for instance, three young men were rowing about for pleasure a little way above the rapids, and somehow their boat got entangled in the current and



swept towards them, and then no human help availed to save it. One of the party, during the dreadful passage, succeeded in catching by the bough of a tree on the island, and clinging to it. He cried for help; but his cry was scarcely heard at all through the roar of the torrent; and the night was too dark for objects to be distinguished. In the morning he was perceived; and since he could not possibly hear any call, the people on shore wrote on a board with very large letters that they were making preparations to save him. After many fruitless attempts, they at length succeeded, towards five o'clock in the afternoon, in getting a boat to him with a rope fastened to it. The poor creature contrived to get in, and he was just being dragged ashore, when unfortunately a wave dashed against the rope with such violence that it snapped, and the boat with the victim was hurried on with frightful velocity and dashed down the Fall. No trace of a body and no fragment of a boat is in such cases ever seen again, for everything is ground to atoms by the resistless force of the water.

Two miles from Niagara-Falls village, a suspension bridge has been built across the ravine through which the Niagara hastens to Lake Ontario. The ravine is very narrow, and the river is said to be

in this part 900 feet deep. The bridge is a masterpiece; and the wire ropes are of sufficient strength to bear the heaviest loaded waggon. It is well worth a visit, and indeed not only for the sake of the bridge, but for the beautiful prospects to be seen. From the bridge itself you look up the picturesque rocky ravine almost to the Falls, and on the other side to Lake Ontario, and across a part of the lake to lovely, smiling landscapes beyond.

The Indian village of Tuscarora, seven miles from the Falls, is now scarcely worth going to see, as the inhabitants, who have become Christians, go dressed like the whites, and build and cultivate their fields just like their neighbours.

I left Niagara-Falls village on the 13th of August, in a stage coach for Lewistown, which lies at the termination of the ravine, where the river increases so suddenly in breadth that you fancy you have reached the lake. At this place I went on board the steamer Bay State to go to Montreal. Seven miles below Lewistown the river, Niagara terminates its short but stormy existence, and finds repose in the bosom of Lake Ontario. At its mouth there lies on the American side a handsome fortress, called Fort George, and on the Canadian another, somewhat inferior, called Fort Niagara.

At sunrise on the following morning the ship's bell rang to awaken the passengers, that they might not miss the sight of the "Thousand Islands" and the entrance into the river St. Lawrence; and at Ogdensburg we exchanged our steamer for a smaller one, the *British Queen*, in order to get better over the rapids. The passage through the "Thousand Islands" is certainly pleasing, for the view is changed every moment, and one picture succeeds another; but the whole is not to be compared with the "Thousand Islands" of Lake Malar in Sweden. There the setting of the lake is formed by magnificent mountains of the most varied forms, covered with dark green woods, between which you catch glimpses of the most picturesque colossal rocks, piled one on another, and of bright pastures and meadows between. The islands themselves, too, are uncommonly beautiful and varied in their character. Here all is flat, and islands and mainland scarcely rise above the surface of the water.

The St. Lawrence forms several rapids, but they are not so strong as to hinder the passage of the steamers. Skill and boldness are indeed required to navigate them, but these obtain the victory; and our Captain carried us fearlessly through them. The one called the Rapid of Lackine, where we ar-

rived late in the evening, is rather dangerous; and as by the time we got there it was raining hard and the night was pitch dark, it was thought better not to cross it till the following morning, when we took in an Indian as Pilot. This rapid has a less threatening appearance than some of the preceding ones; and its chief peril consists in the shallowness of the river at this part. Four men stood at the helm all the time we were passing it, and this is usually done. We arrived in good time at Lackine, which is only nine miles from Montreal; and fortunately by this time the weather had cleared up, and the sun lit up the beautiful hill of Montreal, at the foot of which lies the town.

It has a fine and singular effect, with its Gothic churches, and tin roofs, which glitter in the sunshine as dazzlingly as if they were covered with plates of silver. We entered a beautiful dock, and were brought by a sluice close up to the quay. But scarcely had I landed before I met with an unpleasant occurrence. I drove to the first hotel, Montreal House, and requested to have a room; but the personage to whom I addressed myself looked at me from head to foot, and then at length replied that he had none. The cause of this uncivil reception was, I knew perfectly well, the circumstance of

my coming alone and with merely a small carpet-bag, instead of having half a dozen trunks and band-boxes dragged after me. I went to another hotel, the Temperance House, and there received the same answer; so I thought it better to put an end to this. I took out, therefore, a gold piece of ten dollars, laid it on the table, and informed the polite host that I had not the least objection to pay beforehand for whatever I required. This talisman produced the desired effect; he pushed back the money, and desired that I should be shown to a room. But how doubly painful was this treatment to me, when coming from the United States, where the poorest woman is always sure of being treated with kind and respectful attention.

When I went into the streets of Montreal and asked my way, I either got no answer at all, or the person I addressed endeavoured to get rid of me as quickly as possible with "I don't know." Certainly it did not appear to me that courtesy to strangers could be numbered among the Canadian virtues.

I had brought no letters of introduction, and knew no one in the place; so, as I desired to obtain some information, I thought the best way was to go to the principal newspaper office. In the United

States. I never found an editor of a newspaper who was not acquainted with my name, not even in the smallest town; and when I presented myself I never failed to meet with the most friendly reception. Here, however, I had a different experience; the editor of the principal paper knew nothing about me, and made me aware of the fact with the same courtesy as had distinguished the communications of his fellow citizens. I found at last, however, some more kindly disposed mortals, but thought it as well by way of precaution to assure them that I was not about to make any appeal to their liberality, and that the favours I was going to ask were of no pecuniary nature. The editor of one of the papers, however, the Belgian Consul Mr. Josef, and Dr. Fisher, made me amends for the incivility of their countrymen.

Dr. Fisher, indeed, with whom I had been previously acquainted, invited me to stay at his house, kindly insisting on my coming immediately; and to him also I was indebted for being presented with a ticket for a journey to Quebec and back.

The city of Montreal has 75,000 inhabitants, and is not, like the towns in the United States, divided into regular blocks, but shows in its style of

building marks of being descended from an earlier time. The houses, with their steep lofty gables, have an old French aspect, and they are built of free-stone in as solid a manner as if they were meant to last for eternity; but at the same time they are by no means wanting in taste and elegance. Near many palace-like stone edifices there stand indeed often little wooden houses in a very tumble-down condition; but the streets are neat and clean, and the business going on in them not distressingly hurried, but the people seem to take their time about it in a way they scarcely ever do in England or the United States. Everything has an easy, tranquil air, and the by-streets indeed look somewhat desolate.

The churches are in the Gothic style, and the finest is the Catholic cathedral, built on the model of Notre Dame at Paris. Of the other buildings, the most striking are the Jesuits' college, the banks, some of the hotels, the post-office, the market halls, &c.

The museum is not worth the trouble of a visit. An elk of unusual size and a few small whales caught in the St. Lawrence were shown to me as the most remarkable things in it.

The English hospital, as it is called, though an excellent institution, still leaves much to be desired;

for instance, the place for the half-convalescent to take exercise in is merely a bare grass-plot, without tree or bench ; and the air in the rooms was far from pure ; though of course this is not quite so easy to remedy in a cold country, where windows must often be closed, as it would be under the tropics.

In the new convent of the Grey Nuns there are two very excellent institutions — one for poor, aged men and women, who are taken care of till their death, and the other for children, either orphans, or those who have been entirely neglected by their parents. I came there at ten o'clock in the morning, and, curiously enough, it was the *dinner* hour. The food, which was distributed by one of the nuns, looked very inviting, and consisted of soup, meat, and one more dish, as well as excellent bread. The apartments were large and lofty, and the beds provided with curtains ; the only thing that could be objected to was that the rooms were somewhat over full.

A most beautiful prospect of the city and its environs is afforded from the tower of the cathedral and from the summit of the Montreal hill. I visited both these spots, and could hardly tear myself away, so attractive was the picture there unfolded before me. The venerable antique town, nestling so cosily round the foot of the hill,— the harbour with its



ships and steamers, and all the busy life of the St. Lawrence, which, not far from Montreal, spreads out into a lake with many islands,—the richly cultivated country around, and in the distance solitary mountains of at least 1000 feet high,—all these things make one of the most charming views in all North America.

Mr. Josef was so obliging as to give me a drive in his carriage round the Montreal hill, a circuit of nine miles, through a very favourite and frequented district, scattered over with pretty country houses standing in fine gardens.

Canada, as well as the United States, offers many advantages to European emigrants; the soil is rich, the climate, though cold, very healthy, the price of land even lower than in the United States, the taxes very trifling; and there is very little interference with any one's freedom. But there is unfortunately one drawback in a law which does much to deter all persons who are not English subjects from settling here. When, namely, an emigrant dies before he has attained the rights of citizenship, for which a residence, I believe, of ten years is requisite, he cannot dispose of his "real" property,—house, land, and so forth,—but it all falls to the crown.

*August 18th.* In the evening I set off by the

great steamer Quebec, for the city of the same name; and this boat also, like the Crescent City on Lake Erie, was one of the splendid order which are altogether too magnificent to be comfortable or convenient.

We got to Quebec at nine o'clock the next morning. The situation of this town is even finer than that of Montreal. It is partly built in the same style, indeed, or in a still older one, and the streets are more narrow and crooked: it consists of an upper and lower town, to the former of which you ascend by long flights of steps, though there is also a winding path leading up to it; and even the lower town is somewhat hilly. The population amounts to 45,000 persons, of whom two-thirds are French, descendants of the families who lived there when Canada belonged to France.\*

I had taken a letter of introduction to Quebec, being rather uneasy lest the same thing should happen to me as at Montreal, and I should not be received at a hotel; and so indeed, it proved, but for a different reason, namely, that, as the session of parliament had just commenced, they were all over-full

\* The French founded the first colony in Canada in 1607, and it remained in possession of the country till 1759, when it was taken by the English.

already. The gentleman to whom my letter was addressed sent his nephew with me to a dozen boarding-houses, but they were all crammed with guests, for the town was full of strangers. He himself, I suppose, had no room for me, though he had a very handsome house; so I had no choice but to see as much as I could of the place in a day, and make up my mind to return to Montreal by the steamer in the evening.

The first thing I did was to ascend the promontory of Cape Diamond, which is 345 feet high and has Fort Diamond on its summit; and I learned on this occasion that the Quebec people are fully equal to the Montrealians in politeness to strangers. As I had so very little time to dispose of I was anxious not to lose any of it in dining, so I merely went into a shop and bought some cakes. Opposite to the shop were the blackened ruins of some very large building, evidently burnt, and I asked the girl in the shop what place it was; but she answered, "I hav'n't got any time to tell you about it;" though it was certainly not time that was wanting, as there was no customer in the shop but myself. I afterwards learned that they were the ruins of the governor's palace. When I was about to ascend the hill to Fort Diamond, and perceived that there was no path,

as the ground was all covered with grass, I asked a man whom I met whether it was allowable to go up, to which he responded "Try," and went on his way. I soon forgot these small annoyances, however, when I reached the summit of the hill, and beheld the landscape that lay beneath me. The venerable city lay at my feet, winding in terraces up the sides of the hill; and the eye could wander for twenty-five miles up a lovely smiling valley as far as the spurs of the green mountains, whose rounded heads and long spines partly enclose it; and then expatiate on the St. Lawrence, which here forms a spacious bay, and then winds on its way through green pastures and wooded hills.

Descending from the promontory, I next visited the governor's garden, which is very pretty and freely opened to the public; it is also provided with seats; and a very lovely spot it is to stroll and repose in, for you have all the fine landscape open before you. Among the buildings I chiefly noticed the Catholic church and the House of Parliament, which last has a very fine hall of assembly. At five in the evening I had to return to the steamer, and though I had been running about all day, and was of course excessively tired, I could not prevail on myself to leave the deck till late at night, so beautiful was the scenery on the banks of the St. Lawrence. In

natural beauty and variety I think the banks of this river fully equal to those of the Rhine; but the romantic charm is wanting to them, — no tradition lingers about them, and no ruined castles rise on the heights. There is one thing, however, most remarkable and peculiar, namely, the gorgeous tints assumed in the autumn by the leaves, which are of all shades and gradations of red, yellow, green, and brown, with others glittering like silver between them. I saw garlands made of nothing but these leaves, and they had a splendid effect.

On the 20th of August I got back to Montreal, and in the afternoon of the same day set off for New York. Hitherto, for all my steam-boat journeys in North America, — from New Orleans to St. Louis, from Milwaukee over all the lakes to Montreal, from Montreal to Quebec and back, — I had had my passages free. In the United States, directly my name was mentioned every captain was most obligingly ready to receive me, without even thinking it necessary to ask the leave of any agent or director. In Montreal, as I have said, I had been favoured in the same way through Dr. Fisher; and he endeavoured to procure for me a ticket to the English steamer Canada which navigates the small Lake Champlain; but this time it was without success.

I crossed the St. Lawrence from Montreal on a small steam-boat, then went by the railroad to Ronse's Point (sixty miles), then by the fine steamer Canada, across Lake Champlain, then a short distance down the river Hudson to Whitehall, and from Whitehall by rail to New York,—on the whole about 300 miles, which did not take more than twenty-four hours.

The banks of the Hudson appeared to me a good deal like those of the St. Lawrence, and the railroad from Whitehall to New York runs the whole way along the side of the river; but we went along at such a rate that I could only just catch a few glimpses of the flying landscape. The rate of the mail-trains in America is sixty miles an hour, of others from twenty-five to thirty. The carriages are extremely comfortable, and the prices wonderfully low; but these lines, like that from Callao to Lima, run straight through towns and villages, without having even a railing to separate them from the ordinary roads and foot-paths, so that it is no matter of surprise if there are many accidents. But the ideas of danger or of respect for human life appear to be quite foreign to the American mind.\*

\* Mr. Chopin, one of the most celebrated American preachers, says himself, in one of his sermons, in speaking of a

The entrance into the metropolis of America, New York, is, at least on this side, so little remarkable, that when I was still expecting the entrance, I found I had been long within the limits of the town. You drive a long way through places where there is nothing to be seen but piles of timber, and rows of wooden huts, with here and there a brick house, looking as if it had lost its way among them, and through dirty streets full of all kinds of rubbish and filth.

At the terminus you exchange the steam-engine for horses; but the rails run through a great part of the town, upon which not only travellers are carried from one terminus to another, but also waggons, which, as I afterwards learned, supply the place of omnibuses, and run in various directions. This very convenient arrangement is perfectly safe, since the waggons go slowly, can be stopped at any mo-

great accident on a railroad, "And, against this recklessness, I repeat, provision should be made by every measure which will enforce respect for human life,— a sentiment which I am grieved to say, needs to be more deeply and widely felt in our age and in our country. Life is precious, oh iron-hearted corporations! Against dollars you must balance life; and if a little gain is deemed of more consequence than a bolt more firmly driven or an additional officer at a dangerous point, say not that the community acts merely under excitement, if it cuts the nerves by which corporations *do* feel."

ment, and the line is not at all in the way in the broad street, since other carriages drive across it without the least difficulty.

The entrance into a great city, where you know neither the locality nor any of the inhabitants, has something in it—at least for a woman, rather formidable. I was, however, so fortunate as, at the very moment of my arrival, to meet with a friendly reception from Mr. Wutschel, and on the following day from Dr. Krakowitzer, who pressed me in the kindest manner to come to his house. But as this was situated at Williamsburg, a good way from the actual town of New York, and I received invitations from M. Aigner as well as from the Austrian Consul, who both lived in the centre of the town, I divided my time between these amiable families, who did so much to render my residence agreeable to me that it seemed as if I were living with old and long cherished friends.

The city of New York, with a population of nearly 600,000 souls, lies, as is known, upon an island, bounded on the east and west by the Hudson, on the north by the river Haerlem, and on the south by the bay. The situation is a very fine one; and of all the towns I have seen in the United States it is the most populous and busy; indeed the activity and



bustle of life in Broadway and Wall Streets actually exceed that in the city of London. The throng of men, carriages, omnibuses, carts, waggons, and vehicles of every description, makes it often difficult to get through the streets; and, strangely enough, it is just during the most hurried business hours that the ladies choose to show themselves, in full promenade dresses, on the pavement of Broadway, where, as they are constantly stopping to look at the goods in the shop windows, they add very seriously to the obstructions.

Many of the streets are very broad and shaded by large trees, which add much to their beauty; and the footpaths are commonly, as in London, raised a few inches above the carriage road. Even in the principal streets, however, there is much dirt, which in the hot summers of this country must act prejudicially upon the public health. It is customary, for instance, to put out the dust and refuse from every house in boxes and tubs before the doors; and as the carts that come to take it away often do not pass till near noon, you are continually annoyed by their presence. Little puddles, too, which collect between the pavement and the carriage road, by no means send forth aromatic odours.

There are many imposing looking buildings in

New York, but their beauty consists chiefly in their size, or at most in a portico with pillars. The most remarkable, as usual, are the banks, the Exchange, and the principal hotels — the Metropolis, the St. Nicholas, Irving House, &c. Among the churches, the Trinidad, with its lofty tower, has a grand appearance; but the nave is rather disappointing, as it is neither long nor lofty. Among the houses, there are some built of marble, and some of iron, but also many of wood.

Most families live here, as people do in England, in high narrow houses, which they keep all to themselves; but they are beginning to find out that it is rather inconvenient to be constantly running up and down stairs, as they must do when the dining-rooms are below-stairs near the kitchen, the reception-rooms on the ground floor, and the sleeping-rooms on the floor above. The new houses are indeed furnished with all contrivances for alleviating this inconvenience. Water, both cold and hot, is laid on to the upper stories, and there is a contrivance to bring dishes also up to the first floor; and from every story you can, by means of a pipe in the wall, with a small opening in each room, speak in the easiest manner to the servants below: you just put your mouth to the opening and say what you wish, and

receive the answer in the same manner. The houses, too, are lit all over with gas.

Of museums, picture galleries, &c. there is not much to be seen in New York. There is a private museum belonging to a Mr. Barnum, not worth much, but perhaps deserving of a visit, where you find a collection of stuffed birds and beasts, Chinese dresses, a dwarf, some remarkable animals, a mummy in good preservation—in short a little of everything. In this museum I saw placards stuck up warning visitors against pickpockets, and I afterwards noticed the same thing in many of the principal shops. I do not recollect to have seen this anywhere else.

The shops of New York are numerous, and many in the grandest style. I remember especially Steward's, where every imaginable article of clothing, either for necessity or luxury, can be procured, for both ladies and gentlemen, with the exception only of shoes and jewellery. A great part of the goods in this magazine are displayed in suites of elegant rooms, the appearance of which is that of an industrial exhibition. More than 250 people are employed in this shop.

Not less magnificent in its way is the *locale* of the sugar-baker and confectioner Mr. Taylor, where pastry, ice, and so forth, and beverages of every

possible variety, are to be obtained, as well as dinners and suppers; and at night, when it is brilliantly illuminated with gas, the place has really a superb appearance. The printing office of the "Tribune," the most widely circulated paper in the United States, occupies a whole house of four stories, and employs 293 persons. This paper sells 35,000 of the daily, and 120,000 of the weekly, edition. It is printed with the cylinder press of Mr. Hoe, which prints four pages at the same time in less than four seconds. Mr. Hoe has also made a machine of this kind, to be sent to Paris; but in England I believe these presses have been long in use, so that Mr. Hoe has probably only improved upon the invention. It is very common here, as indeed it is in Europe also, to hear a thing boasted of as an original invention which is in fact only an improvement on an old one.

In my visit to this printing office I had the pleasure of becoming acquainted with Mr. Bayard Taylor, one of the gentlemen engaged on the "Tribune" who has also gained much distinction, both by his poetical talents and by his descriptions of India, Abyssinia, and other countries of the East, where he has travelled. It is not often that a poet has the merit of being at the same time a faithful describer of matters of fact: he is apt to carry too much

imagination with him on his journeys; but Mr. Taylor seems to have been aware of the danger, and has carefully avoided all exaggerations and at the same time cast a poetical charm over all that he has touched on.

The "Novelty Iron Works" of Stillman, Alten, and Company I also visited. They are the largest in America, and not only all kinds of steam-engines are made in them, but the largest steam-boats built and completely fitted up. A thousand men find employment in these works, and the lowest of the workmen receive a dollar a day, and the higher four times as much. Four hundred thousand tons of iron are worked up here every year.

Mr. Stillman was so good as to show me round these gigantic works; and I saw there a steamer lying half finished, to be called the "Metropolis," whose burden is 3200 tons, and which will contain 1000 berths.

As for the great hotels, they are very much like those of New Orleans, the most splendid I had myself ever seen; but here, as in the steamers, the splendour often had to serve instead of real comfort and convenience. It was frequently impossible, for instance, to find so much as a corner where one could sit quietly and write a letter.

In the reception-rooms the great heavy damask curtains fall over half the windows and keep out the light, and the tables are all covered with marble slabs,—cold enough, when the weather is cold, almost to turn to marble the arm resting on them. In the bed-rooms you again find nothing but marble. Writing-tables there are none; and I have often seen people writing on their knees in the most uncomfortable attitudes, because they could find no suitable place. This is indeed paying a price for luxury and show. At the little boarding house of Madame Teuscher, near the Niagara rapids, I found everything I could wish for; and though there was no deficiency of elegant furniture, utility and comfort had not been forgotten.

The largest of these hotels is, I believe, the New York, which is said to contain 1000 rooms. The St. Nicholas and the Irving House have each 400, and employ 300 servants. The whole house is heated by a steam apparatus to an agreeable and equable temperature; so that the fireplaces are really superfluous, and are only retained because the Americans, like the English, are fond of a cheerful blaze on the hearth.

“ New York possesses several handsome theatres, in which English, French, and German dramatic perform-

ances take place, and also an Italian opera. One of the most favourite places of recreation, nevertheless, is that of the "Black Minstrels," as they are called, though they are really whites painted black, to represent negroes trying to adopt the manners of whites. On the evening when I was there ten actors appeared in black evening dress, with white waistcoats and neckcloths, seated themselves in a semicircle, and sang comic songs to the accompaniment of a tambourine or guitar. This entertainment continued for a whole hour, and then followed a kind of comedy, the wit and sense of which was to me profoundly mysterious; and after that there was some dancing. The audience, a very fashionable one, to judge by the elegance of the dresses and the number of carriages at the door, appeared perfectly well satisfied with their entertainment, and laughed prodigiously. That the fair sex here can be excited by a small matter to an astonishing degree of merriment I had noticed on board the steamer; but I was not before aware that the men were equal to them in this desirable gift.

The Castle-Garden Theatre, where ballets are usually performed, pleased me particularly on account of its situation. It stands at the south-east corner of the town, on the site of an ancient battery

that projects into the bay, and is connected with the town by a small bridge; and a gallery runs all round it on the outside, from which on moonlight nights you obtain a magnificent view of the town and city. The number of public and private educational institutions is, as I have already mentioned, very great in the United States, and New York alone boasts a crowd of such establishments.

I visited, amongst others, the Free College, held in a building in the Gothic style, with large lofty halls and corridors, and which is attended by the most distinguished professors. Five hundred youths are here gratuitously instructed during six hours a day in all departments of knowledge, and even supplied with books, paper, &c., free of cost; but, before a lad can be received, he must undergo a rigid examination, and if he does not pass through it creditably, no interest or patronage is of any avail to obtain his admittance. To avoid the chance of favouritism, the professors are not allowed to know the names of the candidates under examination, nor the candidates to hear the decision till they are summoned before the council. Possibly these regulations may tend to check abuses; but human nature is everywhere pretty much the same, and it seems to me that, instead of receiving the rich and



poor indiscriminately into this college, it would be better to reserve these five hundred places for the middle classes who cannot well afford to pay for them.

In the private schools for girls—seminaries as they call them—all manner of arts and sciences, including the Latin and Greek languages, are taught, or said to be taught. When I asked what was the use of teasing the girls with these dead languages, the reply was, that they might more easily learn the languages derived from them, Italian, French, &c.; and one might therefore suppose the ladies of America would be especial proficient in the latter; but this was very far from being the case, for I think I have in no country found fewer who were familiar with foreign languages.

This one-sided education, in which all that is most peculiarly feminine is entirely neglected, is, I think, one great cause of that uneasy longing for what they call emancipation that characterises American women.

They might begin, one would suppose, by emancipating themselves in their own houses. Domestic occupations must, after all, be attended to by somebody; and surely it had better be by the women than the men. It is not necessary that they should

perform the offices of servants; but, if they do not understand how work of the domestic kind ought to be done, the servants of the house will ere long become the masters. The girls in my own country also study foreign languages, music, history, and so forth; but they find time too to make themselves acquainted with womanly duties.

I remember once going to visit a lady in New York, and, finding her from home, was informed by the servant that they were going to move, and that the mistress had gone into the country till it was over and the new house put in order.

And who in the world, I thought, is to superintend the moving? Doubtless the husband, though he had his business to attend to. I should not be surprisèd to hear that the ladies here required their lords and masters to teach their nursery-maids how to wash and dress the children.

It is, I imagine, because the American women are fond of emancipating themselves from the trouble of housekeeping, and the men have really sometimes too much to do, or are not inclined to perform the duties of their wives as well as their own, that married people get into the abominable custom of living in boarding-houses; a custom that draws all kinds of evil consequences after it. A young and

handsome woman is thus often brought into the society of people whose character is far from the best, and this must be so much the more dangerous as she has no household duties to occupy her mind, and her children are sent when only four years old to school. It is by no means uncommon even for unmarried girls who find the life in their parents' houses too quiet, or otherwise not to their taste, for them to leave them and go into boarding-houses.

There is, however, one domestic duty, as it is but fair to mention, which is more generally fulfilled by American women than by mothers in the continental countries of Europe, namely, that of suckling their infants themselves. Except in the Slave States, this office is scarcely ever intrusted to a hired nurse, and may Heaven grant that it never may be.

In the exceptional cases where girls have at the same time an aversion to feminine employments and a strong vocation towards some art or science, and are likely to carry it to perfection, they should be allowed to pursue it; but then they should not do so by halves, but, if they desire to become doctors and professors, renounce all thoughts of being wives also; for it is difficult, if not impossible, to perform at the same time the duties of man and woman; and let the advocates of this kind of emancipation not forget, that

there is no sphere of action more beautiful and noble than the one they have turned away from. In the hands of every mother lies one of the most precious treasures of every state. It is the mother who must inspire her child in its tenderest years with the love of duty and of virtue, and first lead it in the way by which it may become a worthy and perhaps a great and important member of the social body. A wise and thoughtful housewife, and a rational and loving mother, will, after all, remain the ideal of feminine perfection.\*

There are in the United States such extraordinary numbers of poetesses, authoresses, female composers, and so forth, that, if I were to mention the names of all who have been introduced to me as such, I should fill whole pages with them. Doubtless there are among these many highly gifted; but whoever has only written a few verses or a little essay, or composed a waltz or a polká, immediately assumes the high-sounding title of a poetess, composer, &c.; think-

\* Perhaps it may be objected to me that, in leaving my home and travelling about the world as I have done, I have in some measure emancipated myself from the duties of my sex; but I beg it may be borne in mind, that I have only done so when my children were grown up and settled, and had no longer the slightest need of my care; and when I had really no longer any household duties to perform.

ing, I suppose, to make up for the insignificance of the work by the grandeur of the name,—and names certainly do go very far in the United States.\*

But, to return to the “seminaries,” the charge for the education of a girl in one of the first class is 500 dollars a year (a year of ten months) for board, lodging, and instruction in the ordinary subjects of education. Music, dancing, and other “extras” make up 200 or 300 dollars more; and yet, with these high terms, the girls are not allowed to have a bed to themselves, but put to sleep with another, often a perfect stranger. This is worse than in England, where at least this reprehensible practice is mostly, among the respectable classes, confined to sisters or friends; but in America neither man, woman, nor child expects more than a share of a bed. In many families, even of opulent people, I found a maid-servant and two children, or even three children, sleeping together; and, when I inquired what could be the motive for such an arrangement, I was

\* I remember, when speaking with an American publisher concerning the account of my travels that I proposed to write, he asked me what the title was. I smiled, and replied I would think of that when I had written the book. He was of opinion, however, that the title was a very important matter, that the public thought very much of a title, and that a book with a good title was sure of a good reception, &c.

told it was to save time. Truly, all things considered, this must be a costly mode of saving.

I attended several times the sittings of the courts of justice at New York, and the proceedings reminded me of what I had seen in my own country during the brief revolutionary period of 1848. There was a judge and jury, advocates on both sides, and a very attentive audience. One of the trials I attended was for murder, and the case was the following:—

The prisoner, Dr. G——, a man, as it appeared, given up to every kind of profligate excess, had been living at the Hotel St. Nicholas, and at the same time with him a Colonel Loring and his wife. Dr. G——, who was constantly in the habit of coming home intoxicated, came in one morning at three o'clock in the usual condition, and, going into the corridor, rang most violently for his servant, and kept up this ringing so long, that at last Colonel Loring came out of his room, and requested the Doctor to cease ringing, reminding him also, that it was quite useless, as the servants did not sleep in that part of the house, and adding, that his wife had a violent headache and could not bear the noise. But in a short time the ringing began again as violently as ever; and, as Mrs. Loring stated on

the examination, her husband went once more out of his room with the intention of going himself to look for a servant in order to put an end to the disturbance. Dr. G—— asserted that the Colonel addressed some abusive expressions to him; a thing natural enough certainly, under the circumstances, and which he most richly deserved; but, be that as it may, the villain ran into his room, fetched a sword-stick, and with it stabbed Colonel Loring to the heart. He was carried back as a corpse to the room he had just quitted.

I have already mentioned, that in America the vice of drunkenness appears to be regarded as an excuse for all others that it may engender, and on this occasion I heard many attempts to excuse the ruffian murderer on account of his mode of life.

“He did it when he was drunk,” “Who knows what provocation Loring may have offered him?” and so forth. At the trial the worthy Doctor remained as calm and apparently unconcerned as if he had been quite an innocent man. The newspapers spoke of the probability of his acquittal, as he had both money and friends; but he was condemned to seven years’ imprisonment; which seven years, however, on his appealing against the sentence, were immediately reduced to four. I left New York before the affair

was quite settled; but it was the general opinion that, after a few months' imprisonment he would obtain a free pardon. It was added, though, that he would have to leave New York, as he would be constantly liable to insults from the populace.

I have heard it boasted of in America, that the populace have this sense of justice, and will make their opinion felt; but how comes it that a people knowing what justice is, and loving it, should endure this shameful indulgence to crime, and should not take care to choose honourable and incorruptible men for judges and jurymen? The power to make such a choice can surely not be wanting in so free a country as the United States.



## CHAP. XI.

THE ENVIRONS OF NEW YORK. — PUBLIC INSTITUTIONS. — BLACKWELL'S AND RANDALL'S ISLANDS. — THE FIVE POINTS. — JOURNEY TO BOSTON. — THE LETTER OF INTRODUCTION. — PUBLIC DINNER, AT MASSACHUSETTS. — SOCIETY OF MECHANICIANS. — ORPHAN HOUSE. — PRISONS, ETC. — CAMBRIDGE. — LOWELL. — RETURN TO NEW YORK. — THE ELECTION. — DEPARTURE FROM THE UNITED STATES.

I TOOK advantage of my stay at New York to make repeated visits to the environs, as well as an excursion to the seat of Mr. Bryant at Long Island, and another to the residence of the celebrated writer Washington Irving.

The immediate environs of the town are formed by Brooklyn, Williamsburg, and Hoboken, which may, in fact, be regarded as parts of New York, for they are only separated from it by the river. Steam-boats are constantly crossing between the two, and many people live in these suburbs, who come into New York daily for their business. Rather further, on the bay, lies Staten Island. This bay is made the most of by the Americans, who compare it to those of

Naples and Constantinople; but no one else would think of such a comparison. It is nevertheless very fine; but its breadth is too great, or the chains of hills relatively too low. Viewed from the town, these hills appear much more insignificant than they really are; from Staten Island the town itself looks like a mere heap of stones, and of the ships you see nothing more than the forest of masts.

On Staten Island itself there are some fine prospects, and some beautiful country seats; but unluckily all the ground is enclosed by wooden palings, and you can no longer walk through groves and meadows, but must keep to the dusty high-road.

Greenwood, six miles from New York, is the most magnificent cemetery I have ever seen, not only in the United States, but, as far as I know, in the whole world. The richest, softest grass is shaded by the most majestic trees, with silver springs and basins sparkling between their foliage; the weeping willows are some of the finest in the world; indeed these trees seem particularly to flourish in the Northern States of the Union. From the high ground you get a most charming prospect of the town and its environs; and on the whole I would myself greatly prefer a residence here among the dead to one in the noisy city.

Without a ticket you cannot gain admission to

this place of rest, and on Sundays it is entirely closed; so that from this, the most beautiful spot in New York, the working classes are virtually excluded, as they can visit it on no other day.

High-Bridge, ten miles from New York, is the place where the great water-works have been erected, to furnish a supply to the city by means of a lofty aqueduct, which is carried across an arm of the Hudson. The place is also deserving of a visit for its fine views.

I drove thither in one of a line of omnibuses which run every half-hour. This one took ostensibly twelve persons inside, but it never refused any who offered themselves; and I counted at one time fourteen grown persons and five children, of which the youngest was certainly not less than four years old. To my astonishment this amount of stowage was rendered possible by the girls and young women seating themselves without any ceremony on the knees of men quite strange to them. I would not have believed this had I not seen it. Surely this is being rather too free and easy—too unmindful of feminine dignity and delicacy!

Mr. Bryant's country seat lies close to Roslyn, on Long Island, thirty miles from New York. It afforded me great pleasure to become acquainted with

this gentleman, the editor of one of the first papers here, and known not only in his own country, but in many others, as an author and original poet, as well as for his translations from many of our German ones. He was so kind as to invite me to pass some days at his house, which is easily reached by railroad or steamer; and both routes, especially the last, afford the passenger many fine views.

The house of Mr. Bryant is pleasantly situated on a gentle elevation near the sea, and with the houses of the village of Roslyn scattered around, and on all sides fresh foliage and stately willows, with trunks five feet in diameter, grouped about. There was an air of rural repose in the whole scene, as if it had been 100 miles from any great city; and it seemed the very place where the mind might recover its composure, and collect new strength to meet the storms of life. But in the society of the Bryant family, independently of the peaceful loveliness of their abode, there was so great a charm that all the rest appeared subordinate; and in Mrs. Bryant I found the most perfect model of a mistress of a family, uniting in an uncommon degree feminine grace, modesty, and *domesticity*, with strength of character and intellectual culture. Would to God that not America only, but the world, had many such housewives to

show. Gladly would I have stayed for a little the ever rolling wheels of time, while I lingered in this delightful retreat; but the few days I had to pass here flew only too swiftly away.

Washington Irving's seat lies at about the same distance from the city as Mr. Bryant's, but in another direction, namely, on the river Hudson. This great and genial writer received me with the most engaging politeness; in his tranquil benevolent-looking face, when in repose, I should rather have found the amiable country gentleman than the literary man of genius; but when he got into conversation his eyes flashed with all the fire of youth, and his whole countenance beamed with spiritual expression. This is one of the rare and happy cases in which nature has been equally bountiful in her endowments to head and heart.

Washington Irving is a bachelor; but he has brightened his age with the attractions of some amiable nieces, the daughters of his sister, who share with their uncle the enjoyments of his beautifully situated villa; and even in winter he never quits his retirement.

There remained now not much for me to see in New York, except the public institutions, schools, orphan-houses, hospitals, prisons, &c.; and my good

star led me first to the "Tombs," the city prison. I say my good star, because I there became acquainted with one of the best and most true-hearted of women, the matron superintendent, Mrs. Flora Forster, whose character excited my warmest sympathy; and I passed many an hour in her society, both in the Tombs and in her own house.

The building is in the Egyptian style; and I imagined that the name of the Tombs had been bestowed on it from its resemblance to the monuments of the Egyptian kings. It seems, however, that it was for another reason, namely, that at the time of its first establishment it was entirely surrounded by morasses, and so unwholesome that most of the prisoners died.

Criminals of every grade are received into this prison, and particularly drunkards who are found lying in the street. They are kept here for five days, and, on frequent repetition of the offence, are sent for six months to the House of Correction in Blackwell Island. Persons accused of heavier offences remain here till their trial; they have neat, airy rooms to themselves, with a bed and a chair, and receive simple, but wholesome and abundant food. They can also walk for several hours a day in the courtyard, unless the offence with which they are charged be of

a very serious character, when they are kept in-doors. As long, however, as they are not convicted, they are allowed every convenience and comfort that their own purses or the attention of their friends can procure.

Among those brought here for drunkenness, I saw, to my deep sorrow, many women and young girls; and there often came, I was told, as many as thirty or forty in a day. The whole number brought during the preceding year amounted to 6000. Whoever would wish to see this vice in the full horror of its degradation should come here. How it is possible, with such examples as this before their eyes, for the people of America to treat this vice with so much misplaced indulgence, is what I cannot understand.

The superintendent of the female department of the prison is, as I have said, Mrs. Forster; and assuredly if the prisoners leave it without amendment it is not her fault, for she labours with the most earnest benevolence to lead them back to the path of right. I had often occasion to see her in the exercise of her vocation, and I always observed her proceedings with the deepest interest.

The American ladies, no less than those of England and Germany, are in the habit of visiting institutions of this kind, not only to see that their appointed

guardians do their duty, but also to endeavour themselves, by kind expostulation and judicious instruction, to exercise a favourable influence on the minds of the criminal of their sex, and, when their time of punishment has elapsed, to assist them to get into some way of life in which they can earn an honest living. Among the ladies whom I know who are most active in these duties of Christian charity I may especially mention Mrs. Gibbons, wife of the H. E. I. S. Gibbons, and Miss Curtis. The fathers of these two ladies devoted to the same cause much of their fortune and the greater part of their time, and exerted themselves particularly in obtaining places in virtuous families for the grown-up orphans and reformed female offenders. The father of Mrs. Gibbons is now dead, and Mr. Curtis is above eighty years of age; but the two ladies continue their good works in the same spirit of true benevolence.

I went with Mrs. Forster to pay a visit to Blackwell Island, — a small spot of earth, a mile long and half a mile broad, pleasantly situated not far from New York, and in remarkably fine and healthy air. It is entirely occupied by public institutions: one for aged and infirm people, one for the insane, and one for persons sentenced to six months' imprisonment for minor offences.



The three buildings stand at a proper distance from each other, separated by stone walls and gardens, and are perfect palaces for size and solidity of construction. They are of freestone, and were built, I was told, by the criminals themselves.

All these establishments appeared to me admirable in their arrangements. The rooms in which the people work and stay during the day are spacious and airy; their food is good, and amply sufficient; and the greatest order and cleanliness prevail in every department. Whoever is capable of working is required to do so a certain number of hours in the day.

Among the female offenders I was struck by the appearance of a girl of eighteen or nineteen years of age, who wore her hair cut short like a man. When I inquired about her, I was told that she had served six months on board ship as a sailor, and that this constituted the offence for which she had been sent hither!

All the prisoners I saw, both men and women, behaved in an extremely orderly manner; and I heard neither whispering nor laughing among them when we entered their rooms. They were treated, however, not like criminals, with harsh words and rough tones, but as if they were known to be reformed. The ladies who came with me went up and shook

hands with them, and spoke to them in the kindest manner,—a method that must surely be productive of good effect.

The Hospital for the Insane I certainly think superior to Bedlam in London. The unfortunate sufferers are not confined at night in little cells, but sleep in large airy rooms, and, though they are all of the poor class, in good snow-white beds.

The windows are barred in such a way that it is not at all perceived, as the iron rods fit exactly to the wooden window frames. The meals are taken in common at clean, neatly covered tables, with crockery, glasses, and knives and forks; and only those regarded as dangerous are not trusted with these things, but eat from pewter plates, and have their meat cut up for them.

Randall's Island, another quite small one, is also devoted to public institutions, mostly for children. The largest of these, the Home of Refuge, is a magnificent building, only just finished, for the reception of juvenile offenders; and there is another smaller one for orphans and forsaken children, and a hospital for the sick, especially scrofulous children and idiots.

All these institutions are admirable in their arrangements, except that in the hospital there were, it seemed to me, too few nurses; and for that reason

the children were not always as well cared for as might be wished. How is it possible for one woman to attend to all the wants of twenty of these unfortunate creatures? The salaries of these nurses, also, I consider too low.

In the Home of Refuge children are received from the age of ten years, and kept here a longer or shorter time according to the progress of their reformation. Sometimes they obtain their liberty again after three months; and sometimes they are detained till they are of full age, which with girls is at eighteen, with the other sex at twenty-one, years of age. When they leave this institution there are always efforts made to procure for them suitable situations in farm-houses.

Besides the Orphan-house on Randall's Island there are in New York two others, one for coloured children and another for whites, the latter in the very heart of the city, at a place called "Five Points," one of the very worst neighbourhoods in it, a place through which no well-dressed person can venture to pass in the evening without the escort of a policeman. Robberies, murders, and all kinds of crimes are here planned; and it is in the midst of this hell upon earth that the Missionary Society have erected a Refuge for Orphans. One division of it is

used as a penitentiary for the reception of women of bad character who manifest a desire of reformation. They are supplied with work and receive weekly wages, one half of which they are required to pay for their board and lodging, and the other they keep for themselves.

In the school-instruction given to the orphans other children not in the institution are allowed to take part, and the success that has attended these efforts is said to be most encouraging. Many even of the most apparently depraved parents will send their children to the school, and many a youthful sinner has by its means been brought back to rectitude.

In the asylum for coloured children they are received from the second to the twelfth year; and then situations are found for them with farmers or artisans, or as servants with trustworthy families. Strangely enough, the school-instruction is given in one large common hall, where the children sit altogether without any partitions between them. They are, indeed, divided into classes, but the noise is tremendous. The teachers\* scream their questions, and the whole

\* In the American schools these are mostly of the feminine gender, even in the lower schools for boys. In the United States every possible facility is afforded to women who desire

class together screams the answer, but whether a right or a wrong one I for my part found it impossible, for the hubbub, to make out; and this very injudicious method of making the whole class answer at once I found adopted not only in this but in other public schools.

It is a very easy thing to fill the office of a female teacher or professor in the American schools, — not excepting the “seminaries” for the higher classes, — for the books of instruction are so arranged that they have simply to read aloud a portion from them, and they have done all that is required.

In the district of “Five Points” there are some rooms fitted up for the accommodation of the boys who live by selling newspapers, which are well warmed and lighted, with good beds; and elementary instruction is also provided, all for the very small payment of forty-two cents, or rather more than twenty-pence, a week.

The Deaf and Dumb Asylum, under the guidance of the director Mr. Peck, has a very high character, and the pupils are sometimes so far advanced in the various branches of knowledge taught that they seem to have not less, but more, than the ordinary allowance to earn their own maintenance, and they are employed wherever they can be.

ance of five senses. In arithmetic and in writing on themes, they particularly distinguished themselves. Some even spoke a few words — a thing I remember to have noticed in a similar institution in Vienna.

Mr. Peck the elder was absent when I visited the asylum, but it was shown to me with the greatest readiness by his son, who, though a mere youth, understood already as well how to treat these unfortunate beings and gain their affection as the most mature and experienced teacher could have done. It is incontestable that the Americans are fitted for practical life at a very early age; and that is probably to be in some measure ascribed to the general custom of introducing them as soon as possible to business life. This young gentleman I found had already chosen his companion for life, and the bride elect was one of the pupils in the school.

I had now spent three weeks in New York, and had seen most of what, as a stranger, I could find worth seeing; I was therefore recommended to make excursions to some of the other cities — Boston, Philadelphia, and Washington; but, to say the truth, nothing wearies me more than visiting in succession several great towns, especially in America, where they very much resemble one another. I yielded, however, so far to the persuasions of my friends as to

determine to make at least one of these visits, namely, to Boston, the "Athens" of the United States.

I set off on the 10th of October, and went sixty-five miles up the East Hudson River, by the large steamer "Vanderbilt," to the railway. This trip up the river is agreeable at first, from the views of the town of New York and Brooklyn, and various groups of hills; but afterwards the shores become flat and monotonous.

I could not help noticing what a convenient plan was adopted with the goods and travellers' luggage in this vessel, and in transferring them to the railroad. The packages were all placed at once in small waggons, marked for the various stations, and on the arrival of the steamer the horses were standing ready, and there was nothing to do but to push the waggons off the deck of the steamer, take them to the railroad, and hook them on to the train. The change was made with the utmost expedition, yet in the most quiet and orderly manner. In practical matters of this kind the Americans are admirable, and every other nation might go to school to them.

It was two o'clock in the morning when we had to leave the boat and enter on the railroad; but we did the remaining 120 miles and arrived in Boston in four hours.

I alighted at a boarding-house, but no sooner had Dr. Hoffendahl (a German) heard of my coming than he insisted on my becoming his guest, though I had brought no letter to him. To him and the other families of Boston who were so good as to relieve me from the unpleasant hotel life I return my most hearty thanks.

The city of Boston, with a population of 150,000, lies on three hills, and the streets are all planted with beautiful avenues of trees, and, compared with New York, may be regarded as perfectly clean. In the principal streets of business — Washington and Hanover streets.— the bustle is considerable, though not overpowering; and a park in the middle of the town, with trees, and water, and many seats, affords a most pleasant walk, as well as an admirable playground for the children. The public buildings, built of freestone, are fine, and white, as they always are in the cities of the United States. In the way of museums, public galleries, and so forth, there is not much worth seeing; but the Literary Athenæum contains a small collection of statues, busts, and oil pictures, and a considerable library.

The celebrated naturalist Dr. Warren possesses a collection of rare antediluvian fossils, which he was good enough to show me; and among other things a



perfect skeleton of the mastodon found in North America, and said to be the largest hitherto discovered.

The Bunker's Hill monument—a most remarkable one for the history of the United States—is a simple obelisk of grey stone, standing on a hill in the middle of the town. It was erected to the memory of those who fell in that heroic battle which was fought in the first War of Freedom (1774), which, as is well known, commenced here. This monument is undoubtedly the finest ornament of the city, and the pride of the country. You can ascend to the summit of it, though it is somewhat of a labour; but you will be rewarded by the fine view you will obtain of the city and the country round it.

I had the good fortune while in Boston to make the acquaintance of Mr. Rever Barnard, who showed me the greatest attention, accompanied me personally everywhere, and, when his time allowed of it, used to come in the morning to fetch me.

I had indeed brought from New York a letter of introduction to one of the first commercial houses in the city, with the assurance that it would procure for me the most friendly attentions. But, when I delivered my missive, the gentleman to whom it was addressed received me in the coldest manner, which

may perhaps be accounted for from my being very simply dressed and coming on foot.

He took an immense time to read the few lines of the letter. Very likely he was considering the while what sort of reception to give me; and he inquired at length *what I wanted*, as if he thought I had come to ask alms of him.

I replied in the same tone, "I want nothing. This letter to you was given me without my asking for it, and I thought myself obliged to deliver it."

When he saw that I did not mean to ask him for anything (apparently he could not quite satisfy himself on that point from the letter), he said that, if I required any *information*, he would be happy to afford it me; and therewith our colloquy ended, and I never saw or heard anything more of him. Here was a specimen of the *Plutocracy*, not of Boston alone, but of all the world over. Their pride and arrogance are far more unsupportable than that of the real aristocratic class, who generally have at least the grace of deportment, that is often wanting to the former. In Boston these purse-proud people are said to hold together more than anywhere else; they scarcely associate with any but their own class, marry amongst themselves, and even live almost all together in one street, *videlicet*, Beacon-street. And

yet. I could excuse these people sooner than their worshippers; for how soon would pride, either of birth or money, descend from its pedestal, were there no crawling parasites to do it honour.

I had come to Boston, as I have said, on the 11th of October, at six o'clock in the morning; on the same day I was presented to the mayor Dr. Smith, and in the evening, at his invitation, went to a grand dinner of the Massachusetts Mechanical Institute, which takes place once in every three years at Faneuil Hall; a place of no less historical interest than the Bunker's Hill monument; for here the first meetings were held, the first important resolutions taken; from here the American forces mounted to their first battle; and hence this memorable hall bears the title of the "Cradle of Freedom."

Thinking with profound veneration of this bygone time, I entered this hall, and found it brilliantly illuminated and tastefully decorated for the banquet. There was a band of musicians in the gallery, and the table was laid for 800 guests; but, though the viands were of the greatest variety, there was no wine or spirituous drink, and the only beverages were water, tea, and coffee.

The state of Massachusetts belongs to the Temperance Union.

The dinner lasted for about an hour ; after which there were speeches for two hours ; and the mayor showed me the greatest attention, and made only too flattering mention of me to the company, to whom he introduced me. At his request I stood up, and was greeted with loud applause ; and I never regretted more than at that moment my very slight acquaintance with the English language, as it prevented my expressing my thanks for this very friendly reception.

Between the speeches there were songs, hymns, &c., not forgetting the favourite national air of "Yankee Doodle ;" and the company broke up about eleven o'clock.

The public institutions of Boston are conducted in the most exemplary manner. That for the blind, one of the most remarkable, was unfortunately closed, as it was the vacation time ; but I had nevertheless the pleasure of becoming acquainted with the director Mr. Howe, who has gained so high a reputation by his mode of management.

Not far from this establishment is another for idiots ; and truly wonderful is the illustration here afforded of the power of educational training. All these poor creatures were clean in their dress and orderly in their deportment, and many of them could

read, a few write, and some even had some notion of geography.

I was particularly struck by the appearance of two sisters, from the excessive smallness of whose heads, as well as from the expression of their faces, I should have considered devoid of any spark of intelligence ; but I found they had been taught to read a little, could tell the days of the week, and distinguish colours. There was a most beautiful fair-haired little girl of six years old, in whose brilliant blue eyes one could certainly not perceive the deficiency of reason, yet hitherto it had not been found possible to teach her anything ; she was, I observed, in everlasting restless motion.

As long as these unfortunate creatures remain in this benevolent institution they are not perhaps so much to be pitied ; but, when they are thrown out on the wide world, in which they have no part, into the society from which they are entirely cut off, their fate must be a mournful one ; and it is found, alas, that they generally attain to a considerable age,—perhaps because no care, no passion troubles their repose.

The General Hospital of Massachusetts I consider in all respects one of the most excellent that I have seen in the United States, and I should be almost inclined to place it on the same rank with those of

Surabaya and Sammerang in Java. Higher praise I could not give it.

The prison of Boston is also a magnificent building, which, with its fine cupola, has the appearance of a very handsome church.

The interior forms a long and lofty hall, with a narrow building on each side, divided into three stories entirely occupied by cells, with grated doors and windows opening upon a gallery that runs all round the building. The whole looks very much like an iron cage.

The prisoners get light and air enough from the hall, and have also the amusement of seeing what is going on there, but with each other they can hold no intercourse. The gaoler sits below in the hall, whence he can overlook the whole of the cells at a glance.

I went into the kitchen to see the distribution of the food, which is extremely good. The prisoners have meat with good soup five days in the week, and the other two days fish. A pound of meat with three large potatoes and a large piece of bread is the allowance for dinner; a pound of bread with coffee for breakfast; and in the evening bread and tea. I should not be surprised if the minor offences were sometimes committed for the sake of being sent here,

since there is this abundance of good food and no work to be done.

The Hospital for the Insane consists of three buildings, each with its separate beautiful garden, and two of which are appropriated to the opulent classes—eight gentlemen and eight ladies. Each patient has two splendidly-furnished rooms, a bathroom, and a separate attendant; and for all this, including medical advice, the charge is only twenty dollars a week.

The third building contains lodgings with humbler accommodations for three dollars, and also many gratuitous ones.

Of the schools that I visited in Boston I may say nearly the same as I have already said of those of New York,—they may be regarded as models of their kind; and I was particularly glad to find that the coloured girls and boys were so well taught, that they can be afterwards employed as teachers.

In the largest of the People's Schools, which has above 600 pupils, and is under the direction of Mr. Barnard, I for the first time saw the girls instructed in feminine hand-works, plain needlework, embroidery, &c; and this judicious innovation is I believe to be ascribed to Mrs. Barnard, who has the superintendence of the girl's school. During the

day the schools are attended by children; but three or four times a week, during the two hours, from seven till nine, it is open for young people whose education has been neglected in their childhood. Mr. Barnard is so esteemed and beloved by his pupils, that they not only greet him joyfully when he enters the school, but run eagerly to meet him whenever they see him, as I had many opportunities of noticing during my walks in the town.

I found, thanks to the kindness of my indefatigable friend, an opportunity of making two excursions from Boston,—one to Cambridge and the other to Lowell.

The first, which is about four miles from the city, is the largest and most important university in the United States. The number of students this year amounted to 900, of whom 700 were supplied with board and lodging. It is quite a little colony, and consists of many houses lying in gardens and meadows, some of which are occupied by lecture-halls, others used as dwelling-houses for the students, and every professor has a small one to himself. The library contains 80,000 volumes, and, like the university, is the most considerable in the United States. Among other things I was shown two manuscript Bibles, one of the ninth, the other of the fourteenth



century, and a MS. copy of a Greek work of Hippocrates, so closely and exactly copied from the original, that it is scarcely possible to distinguish one from the other. It is said that 1500*l.* have been offered for this specimen of calligraphical skill.

At this university I became acquainted with the very celebrated naturalist M. Agassiz, who, before he left his native country of Switzerland, ascended all the most remarkable mountains and glaciers, Mont Blanc among them; and the meeting was so much the more agreeable to me, as I had been, on my first voyage round the world in 1847, most kindly received by a near relation of his at Canton in China.

M. Agassiz is occupied at Cambridge, in addition to his professorial duties, with collecting objects of natural history; and he is said to have one of the richest collections of insects and butterflies in the United States. Unfortunately I could not see them, as they were all packed up to be carried to another house.

Lowell, the most well known manufacturing town in the United States, lying twenty-five miles from Boston, has a population of 33,000 persons. Hence come all the finest carpets, calicoes, and printed goods made in the country. There are eleven factories,

which at the time I visited it employed 8476 girls, 4507 men, and a capital of 14,000,000 of dollars.

The girls almost all live in boarding-houses attached to the factories, and in which, as well as in the factories themselves, the most judicious vigilance is exercised concerning their conduct. At these establishments they pay for good board and lodging only five dollars a month. Those who refuse to live in these houses have to submit to a slight weekly deduction of twenty-five cents from their salaries; a little tax, which is meant to balance any objection they might have to the superintendence to which they are subject in the boarding-houses.

The conduct of these young women is said to be on the whole so exemplary, that highly respectable parents do not hesitate to send their daughters to work in the factories. This circumstance was so new to me with respect to factory workwomen, and so interesting, that I paid comparatively little attention to the machinery, though it has unquestionably been brought to a high degree of perfection; if I had been more attentive, I know far too little of such things to venture to describe them; and I would always rather confess my ignorance than merely write out of other books.

I returned to New York on the 19th of October, and remained there till the 10th of November.

Three days before my departure the elections for various important municipal and other offices took place, and it was feared that on this occasion there would be some stormy scenes, and possibly even battles, as the parties were violently opposed to each other, the real point at issue being the introduction or rejection of the temperance law.

I walked about the town during the greater part of the day, and especially in the "Five Points," and in the Sixth Ward, in order to observe the voters; and it did not appear to me that their aspect was very tranquillising.

Fortunately, however, the affair passed off more quietly than had been expected, and particularly in the neighbourhoods above mentioned, which have usually in such cases been the scenes of tremendous riots, insomuch that the latter has acquired the honourable appellation of the "Bloody Ward." The cause of this unusually pacific behaviour was, in all probability, the general expectation of the very contrary, for no one liked to leave his house without efficient protection. Each party shrank from commencing active hostilities, and the day consequently passed without any further mischief than one man being killed and several severely wounded in Williamsburg.

On the 10th of November I left New York in the splendid steamer Pacific for Liverpool.

I had now seen the country which I had so long ardently desired to visit, and which, though less rich in natural beauty than those of the southern hemisphere, is incomparably more so in the energetic industry of its inhabitants, and interesting to all by its peculiar political constitution.

I found many things different from what I had expected, many things that were other than what they ought to be, and by no means in accordance with the principles of freedom and equality, which are the fundamental pillars of American institutions. Slavery in some states,—the exclusion of free negroes and coloured people from society, and from political and civil existence in others,—the cruel law by which fugitive slaves are hunted and caught like wild beasts, and which even commands all to whom they may fly for refuge to deliver them up to their pursuers,—the inexcusable indulgence of judges and jurymen towards white criminals, who, as it is constantly declared by the American papers, if they have money or friends, may always hope to escape with very trifling punishment, or none at all,—and, lastly, the puritanical observance of the Sunday, which denies to those chained all the week to their

work the privilege of cheerful and innocent recreation. On the rich it falls very lightly, for those who have six Sundays in the week can of course very easily submit to such a privation.

But, with all these defects and short comings, it is impossible for a candid observer to deny that (the Slave States excepted) the good results of the institutions and laws of this great country do not merely balance, but immeasurably outweigh, the evils accompanying them. The United States stand alone in the world, and well indeed would it be for humanity if others were formed after their model.

Would that the great ones of the earth, who regard themselves as so indispensable a part of the social fabric, would come here and see that nations can do, not merely as well, but incomparably better, without them, and that a swarm of highly-paid official personages, a court absorbing millions of money, and immense and costly armies, are really not absolutely necessary to a people's welfare. Most justly are the Americans proud of the country which is free from these unnatural burdens, and where every man (with the exceptions above stated) may vindicate his claim to the position to which the capacity given him by God may entitle him.

## CHAP. XII.

ARRIVAL IN LIVERPOOL.—VOYAGE TO ST. MICHAEL'S.—PUNTA DEL GADA. — SINGULAR ANTIQUE CUSTOM. — VILLA FRANCA.—THE ILHEO.—THE BATHING-PLACE FURNAS.—THE HOT SPRINGS. — DEPARTURE FROM ST. MICHAEL'S.—ENTRANCE INTO THE TAGUS.—LISBON.—RETURN TO ENGLAND. — CONCLUSION.

THROUGH the kind services of the venerable Mr. Curtis of New York the very acceptable compliment of a free ticket for the passage to Liverpool (a voyage of 3200 miles) was offered me for any of the vessels of the American line of Messrs. Collins and Co.

The American companies I found in this respect incomparably more liberal than the English, for on no English vessel, either sailer or steamer, was I ever offered the smallest passage free of charge; and I beg once more to return the former my sincere thanks for the friendly help which, with that of the no less courteous Dutchmen, enabled me to extend my travels far beyond the limits I had originally

contemplated. After a rapid passage of ten days and a half we arrived quite safely in Liverpool, and Captain Nye very politely accompanied me himself to the Adelphi Hotel (where the proprietor declined receiving any payment from me), and on the following morning took me to the railway station. He was one of those persons whom it is as painful to part from after a short acquaintance as if they were long-trying friends.

In London I was cordially welcomed by Mr. Waterhouse, the keeper of the Mineralogical Department of the British Museum, where he resides; and I spent some weeks in his amiable family endeavouring to recover from the effects of the obstinate fever. It had attacked me once more on the voyage, and I had had recourse to the American remedy of brandy, red pepper, and sugar, and, as I have before said, with the best effect, as it never visited me again.

My rambles were, however, not yet at an end, for, before returning to my native country, I desired to pay a visit to one of my sons, who was settled at St. Michael's, one of the Azores Islands. For a long time I could not make out how I was to get there; but at length it appeared I might take a passage in the Royal Blue Jacket, one of the small fruit schooners, about two hundred of which go every year

from England to St. Michael's for oranges. These vessels are of course not in the least adapted for passengers, and the master Mr. Livingstone told me himself that he could offer me no convenient accommodation, and could give me no other berth than that in which his cook then slept. But what was to be done? To St. Michael's I would go, and I therefore made up my mind to the inconvenience. The passage lasted unluckily twenty days, and during all that time I could not once undress myself. In the hole in which I slept it was impossible to move; and, what with the tremendous rolling of the little craft in the almost constantly stormy sea, the coal smoke from the stove, and the suffocating atmosphere of the close little cabin, which on account of the bad weather had to be kept constantly closed, I really thought sometimes I should never reach St. Michael's alive.

These things, however, I have no right to complain of; I might have foreseen, at all events, their probability; but I think I have some ground of complaint against the owner or part-owner of the vessel Mr. Chessel of Bristol. I had agreed with the master and the agent of this Mr. Chessel, a Mr. Burnett, to pay three pounds for my passage without board; but when, on the day we were to sail, I came



on board with my luggage, the skipper told me, with some embarrassment, that I must go again to the agent's office. I did so, and found there Mr. Chessel himself, who, in a pretty rough tone, informed me that I could not have the passage under five pounds. I told him that the agreement was already made, and my luggage on board; but he said that did not matter, I might pay the five pounds, or fetch my luggage back again.

I might certainly have gone before a magistrate and have endeavoured to compel him to keep to his agreement, but time pressed; the ship was ready to sail, and I could not do other than submit to the extortion.

As I had only the three pounds with me, I told Mr. Chessel that I would pay the remainder to the captain on board; but the noble-minded man—judging me, I suppose, by himself—declined to take my word, and came on board himself to fetch his two pounds. I am glad to say I have not met with many Mr. Chessels in the course of my travels.

On the 31st of December we came at length in sight of the pleasant island of St. Michael's, and I was beginning to indulge the hope of spending my new year's eve with my son, whom I had not seen for six years, when the wind shifted to an unfavour-

able quarter, and compelled us to drive hither and thither; and at last, at nightfall, to go out to sea again. The next day we again got near the land, and, when we saw the boat of the medical officer coming towards us, we thought there was now nothing to prevent our landing. But how painfully undeceived were we by the dismal tidings, that we must first submit to some days' quarantine, on account of the cholera having been in England, though it had long since ceased. After this it was very satisfactory, though somewhat puzzling, to see the doctor come on board again the very next day, and inform us that the quarantine was at an end and we were free. I afterwards learned that a little before our arrival, and on the very same day, a ship had come from Lisbon that brought to the Board of Health the official order to do away with the quarantine, and, as all letters and newspapers had been delivered at ten o'clock in the morning, the official despatches had certainly not been left out. Whether the doctor could in mere carelessness have neglected to open them, or that he had any reason for not mentioning the contents, one cannot presume to say; but his silence, taken in connection with the fact that every visit to a ship brings him a fee of four or five dollars, and that in our case he had two visits to pay, one to

put on the quarantine and another to "take it off again, does certainly leave room for conjecture. Considering that the roads are extremely unsafe, that there is no harbour, and that in this winter time storms sometimes arise suddenly, and last for weeks together, driving all ships off the island, we might have paid rather a heavy price for putting this fee into the doctor's pocket; but what surprised me most in the affair was that nobody, not even the English consul, called him to any account.

The island of St. Michael's, one of the Azores\*, is extremely pretty, and possesses an abundance of hills and mountains covered with fresh verdure, and thrown about with graceful irregularity. At the first glance you see that it is of volcanic origin; the shape of the mountains, the dark sea shore, often entirely of black lava, afford sufficient evidence of this. But no smoking crater is to be found here any longer,—the volcanos have long since raged themselves out,—and the lava has become so hard that it is almost converted into stone, and is everywhere covered so richly with vegetable soil, that the most luxuriant corn fields

\* The Azores group consists of nine islands, of which St. Michael's is the largest. They were discovered and taken possession of by the Portuguese in 1446, and are usually reckoned to Africa.

wave and fragrant orange groves blossom on its surface.

The length of the island is fifty-eight miles, by a breadth of ten or twelve; its population, about 90,000; its trade, which is more considerable than from its extent might be anticipated, chiefly consists in the export of oranges, of which it sends out yearly from 120,000 to 140,000 chests, each on an average containing 800, which would give the enormous amount of 100,000,000 oranges. Two hundred ships usually arrive here from England between the months of November and March, and go back laden with this fruit; for, with the exception of the cargo of one ship that goes to Hamburg, and two or three to the United States, all the oranges exported go to England. The second considerable article of export is Indian corn, as well as other kinds of grain. On the whole, about 450 ships visit this island every year, and carry away produce to the value of 500 *contos da Reis*, or 90,000*l.* sterling.

Notwithstanding this extensive commerce the people are extremely poor,—a fact chiefly to be accounted for from the peasants not being proprietors, but only farmers of their lands, and holding them not for their lifetime, but on leases of but a few years.

Of the town of Punta del Gada, which, including the immediate environs, has about 16,000 inhabitants, there is not much to be said. The style of building is the European; the houses mostly insignificant looking, with small balconies and preposterously large chimneys,—a thing I could not well understand, as the kitchen fire is the only one kept in the house. Other fireplaces I found, to my sorrow, there were none; although the winter months, from November to March, are bleak, rainy, and stormy.

I was unlucky enough, too, to meet with an uncommonly severe winter, and really suffered very much from the cold; for though there was no snow or ice, the temperature was very close to the freezing point, there were most cutting gales, and the pleasant days were few and far between.

Even in the beginning of May the warmth was not more than in my own country; but that the climate is not always as severe is sufficiently evident from oranges and many other fruits even of tropical regions coming to perfection. Bananas, too, flourish here: the custard-apple not quite so well, as it is rather hard and tasteless; but pine-apples succeed in glass-houses without any artificial heating, and attain to an extraordinary size. One sent me by a Portuguese

lady (the wife of Dr. Agostiuko Mochado) exceeded any that I had ever seen in India; but it was not equally sweet. European vegetables, such as peas, cabbage, turnips, &c., do not need any particular care.

The inhabitants of the Azores, who are descended from the Portuguese, have fine dark eyes and hair; and, contrary to what is the case in any other country that I am acquainted with, the lower classes are handsomer than the higher. The costume of the latter is entirely French; but the people make some variation, at least in the head-dress, for the men wear a stiff cloth cap with a far-projecting, curiously-cut brim, and a piece of cloth or velvet, eight or ten inches broad, hanging down all round, which protects the neck from sun and rain. The head-dress of the women is still more grotesque; a kind of hood of blue cloth, ten inches broad and certainly a foot and a half long, which, by means of strong whalebones, is made to assume the form of a gigantic cock's-comb. In addition to this ingenious contrivance, they wear over their European dresses a long heavy cloth cloak reaching to their feet, and do not put it off even in the greatest heat. In this absurd and tasteless costume, a mother would hardly know her own daughter; for the great cock's-comb into which the head is inserted

projects so far forward that the face is scarcely to be seen at all, and the mantles are all exactly alike. No woman of the lower class however would be seen in the streets without a hood and a mantle; every penny is scraped together to purchase one; and whoever is not so fortunate as to be able to procure one of these elegant and convenient articles borrows one of a friend, or hires one for money.

No less strange is the custom here, that no girl or young woman is ever to go out alone. A maid servant will not go alone across the street on a message, much less to buy or fetch anything; and in every house a man servant must be kept to go on errands and make purchases. I really used to pity the poor girls, for, unless they have some ancient relative who will take pity on them and occasionally take them out, they are fairly imprisoned, and sometimes do not leave the house for a year together, not even to go to church on the Sunday.

About forty years ago, I am told, if a lady wished even to pay a ceremonious visit to another, she performed it in the following way:—she sent a servant the day before, to say that on such a day she would, at a certain hour, drive past in her carriage; and, accordingly, at the appointed time, she came, in great state and full dressed, but with the curtains of her

carriage closely drawn, and stopped opposite the house of the lady to be visited, who, on her side, was seated at her window, also attired in her best, and also with her curtains closed. When the carriage stopped, the curtains were drawn aside, the two ladies performed salutations, and then the carriage drove on,—the visit being concluded.

At that time the ladies of St. Michael's had such a dread of the other sex, that if on arriving at a friend's house they found that a man, even a relation, was with her, they would not come in; or the hostess would request her masculine visitor to retire. At balls,—for though no public ball was ever given, there were sometimes entertainments of this kind at private houses,—things were managed in a very comical manner. The female guests took no part in the dancing, but sat with the ladies of the house in an adjoining room, and, moreover, in the dark, that the gentlemen might not see them; while the cavaliers danced with the maid servants of the family, and others of the same class who had been invited for the purpose.

I stayed some months in St. Michael's, and, besides walks in the environs, made an excursion to the bathing-place of Furnas, about twenty-seven miles from Punta del Gada, and renowned for its hot



springs. The people of fashion of the island go there for some weeks or months every year, but, as is usual with such places, more for recreation than for the sake of the waters.

We performed the little journey, as is customary here, on ass-back, and took our way along the seashore, by Villa Franca, which lay fifteen miles off. This little town is as charmingly situated as Punta del Gada; and we passed the night in it, at the house of a Mr. Gago, where we found all kindly made ready for our reception. On the following morning we rowed in an open boat to the tiny island of Ilheo, which is hardly three hundred yards off. It consists of nothing more than a rocky girdle enclosing a basin, with an opening in the rocks just large enough to admit one small vessel; and it is quite evident that it has been a small volcano which has burnt itself out and then fallen in. At a very trifling cost this miniature bay could be made into a splendid dock for the repair of vessels; but no one here has any idea of these things.

Towards noon we continued our journey, and reached Furnas in good time, after a pleasant ride. About a mile from it there is a pretty lake, surrounded by beautiful mountains, and at the northern end of which hot springs bubble up out of the ground; but

we did not go to see them, as it just then began to rain.

Furnas itself lies in a most delightful valley, embosomed in mountains rising one above another; and beautiful woods, luxuriant corn-fields, and fresh green pastures cover both hill and dale. It reminded me vividly of some I had seen in Carinthia and the Tyrol. Clouds of steam rising from the earth at a short distance announce the whereabouts of the hot springs, the *Caldeiras*; and every stranger hastens eagerly to behold a phenomenon that the whole population of St. Michael's speaks of with mingled rapture and terror.

My own expectations were, nevertheless, not very highly raised, knowing that I had seen in Iceland the finest thing of the kind to be met with in the world; but, perhaps for this very reason, I found them very striking. One of the springs boils up with violence to a height of from four to six feet; another, somewhat less; and a third, not more than ordinary boiling water. The most remarkable of all is the mud-spring, *Pedro Botelho*, as it is called; it is environed in a picturesque manner with dark rocks, amidst which its noise is echoed and re-echoed to a frightful din; and, as a large cliff hangs right over it and prevents the perpendicular ascent, the force

beneath throws out the boiling mud all round it to a distance of twelve or fifteen feet. There are also in the neighbourhood great numbers of insignificant little springs, some of which even boil up in the midst of cold brooks. Many of these springs contain iron, and one is decidedly acid (*aqua ajedco*).

On a well chosen spot of this lovely valley, the Viscount de Praia, one of the largest landed proprietors in the island, has built himself a house, and laid out a garden. Neither were quite finished when I was there, but every window of the house will command a magnificent view; and the gardens, which are in grand style, with basins, dark groves of trees, and blooming parterres of flowers, bore witness to the taste of the owner.

At Furnas we made a party to visit the summit of a mountain about 2,000 feet above the sea level; and where we saw others towering far above us, and among them the Pico de Vara of 4,000 feet. At our feet lay the lovely valley of Furnas, with its Caldeiras, the lake and other valleys, with pleasant villages; and on both sides of the island the vast, immeasurable ocean.

On the south side we could distinguish the island of Santa Maria, about forty miles off. On our return to Punta del Gada, we went along the

northern coast, by Ribiera Grande, where the road was better than on the way by which we had come; though not so rich, or various in the prospects it afforded.

The Carnival time passed at St. Miguel, with no other notice than that in the last three days, as in Brazil, the silly custom prevails of throwing water at each other. During this time, instead of going out in search of amusement, you are obliged to lock yourself in your room, and even then if you venture to open your window, you are very likely to receive a sudden shower-bath from one of your neighbours; or, if the position of the window allows of it, a similar salute from the street. The people blow out the insides of eggs, or make mock oranges, lemons, &c., of wax, and then filling them with water pelt each other with them, or pour whole pitchers full from their windows on the passers-by. No women are to be seen in the streets, and the few men who venture out endeavour to protect themselves with umbrellas. All this does not seem overpoweringly facetious, at least to a stranger.

The fruit-ships had all left for England by the end of March; and, as I had lingered at St. Michael's till the middle of May, I had no choice left, if I wished

to leave the island, but to go by the way of Lisbon ; although my intention was to go to London.

I sailed accordingly by a little Portuguese vessel of 110 tons, the Michaelense, and to my great surprise found myself as comfortably accommodated as I should have been on many a steamer. The berths were high and roomy, the food abundant and well prepared, the attendance good, and the table neatly served. This was the first Portuguese vessel by which I had ever sailed ; but if all resemble it, I can certainly recommend them to travellers with a good conscience.

The distance from St. Michael's to Lisbon is 720 miles, and this we did in eight days, seeing no land till we neared the Portuguese coast. The only incident I remember as interrupting the complete monotony of the voyage, was the floating past of the carcase of a dead whale, about which hundreds of birds of prey were hovering.

On the 28th of May we ran into the Tagus, which is, at the mouth, only to be distinguished from the sea by its colour. The city of Lisbon lies about six miles up the stream ; but vessels usually come to anchor opposite a central point of the town, nearly three miles further. It took us seven or eight hours to do this nine miles ; but the way was so beautiful that I did not at all regret the loss of time. The

river here spreads to a majestic breadth, and is covered with vessels of all sizes, with steamers rushing about among them; the shore is formed by fine hills, of which the only defect is want of wood. At the entrance of the Tagus, Fort St. Julian is seen on one side, with the beautifully-formed mountain of Serra da Cintra rising behind it, at no great distance, and on the other shore, a lighthouse surrounded by a battery (Torre da Bugio) close to the sea.

Gliding past picturesque villages and small forts, you come to Belem, where the river loses something of its breadth, and bathes the walls of a magnificent tower, in the Gothic and Moorish styles, furnishing a superb memorial of the old time; then, while on the southern bank, villages still alternate with half-decayed castles and forts, on the northern the city of Lisbon spreads itself out before you, not only covering the strip of plain between the river and the hills, but covering the hills themselves. Opposite the centre of the town the river opens to such a width that it is like a spacious bay, on whose distant shore you see villages and groves, with mountains rising behind them. I sat for hours at the window of my hotel, which was close to the river, gazing on the lovely panoramic picture.

The arrival in Lisbon is attended by one considerable annoyance in the extortion and pestering of petty officials. As soon as we reached Belem the health officers came on board, then the custom-house officers, then the ship police, then the harbour-master, then officers to examine our passports, &c., till there really seemed to be no end to them, and, though we came from a Portuguese possession, we were subject to as rigid and curious an examination as if we had come from the moon. For the passports, of course, there was hard cash to be paid, and the custom-house authorities are so severe that you are not allowed to take the smallest carpet-bag with you. Considering how proud we are of European progress, it seems strange to find a European government thus endeavouring to throw all possible hindrances in the way of travelling.

Of the city of Lisbon I saw very little, though I spent twelve days in it, for I was so very unwell as to be forced to keep my room the greater part of the time. Scarcely was I able to drag myself up a few of the hilly streets that form one of the most peculiar features of this city, in order to obtain better views of the river, the town, and its environs; but, when I did, I saw that it extended over and beyond the line of hills. The churches have no fine domes or

towers; nor is there anything remarkable in the style of architecture of the houses, but here and there, on hills in the middle of the city, lie picturesque masses of ruins of palaces and churches, destroyed in the tremendous earthquake of 1755, which, as is well known, laid the greater part of Lisbon in ruins, and in which thousands of the inhabitants perished. Splendid parterres of flowers adorn the public gardens, and those in the lower town have also most beautiful and venerable trees. The Portuguese appear in general to be great lovers of flowers, as I had already occasion to notice at St. Michael's; and here these lovely messengers of spring met me in crowds, even in places where I should never have expected to see them, as, for instance, in the courtyard of the custom-house at the landing-place.

My illness increased during the latter days of my stay, so that I was forced to remain in bed, and renounce even the drive to Serra de Cintra, so renowned for its picturesque character and luxuriant vegetation, and the summer residence of the royal family, &c. I only left my room to ship myself on board the steamer Iberia for Southampton.

This steamer, unluckily, did not belong to an American company, and, though I paid 10*l.* for my passage, I had much worse accommodation than on



the little Portuguese sailing vessel, where I came about the same distance for 3*l.* 10*s.*: My berth was in a little dark gloomy cabin, where were stowed eleven women besides myself, and four children; and my son, though he paid the first price, had to sleep in the second cabin. We left Lisbon on the 9th, and got to Southampton on the 14th of June, and I came on the same day by the railroad to London, where I was once more cordially welcomed by the kind family of Waterhouse, and took up my abode with them in the British Museum. And herewith ended happily my Second Journey Round the World.

Should I anywhere have spoken too strongly with respect to the manners and customs of countries through which I have passed, or have taken up erroneous views concerning them, I can only beg for the indulgent consideration of my readers; and repeat what I said in the first book of travels I ever published, that I am by no means to be counted among the fortunately gifted of my sex, but that I am a most simple and unpretending person, and can claim as a writer no merit whatever, beyond that of describing truly and without exaggeration what I have seen and experienced.

**LONDON:**  
**Printed by SPOTTISWOODS & Co.,**  
**New-street-Square.**





00032754



